00038330

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 13 February, 2016

ADVENTURES

ON THE

WESTERN COAST

OF

SOUTH AMERICA,

AND THE

INTERIOR OF CALIFORNIA:

383

INCLUDING

A NARRATIVE OF INCIDENTS

AT

THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS, NEW IRELAND, NEW BRITAIN, NEW GUINEA,

AND OTHER ISLANDS IN THE PACIFIC OCEAN;

WITH

AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATURAL PRODUCTIONS, AND THE MANNERS AND CUSTOMS, IN PEACE AND WAR, OF THE VARIOUS SAVAGE TRIBES VISITED.

BY JOHN COULTER, M.D.

AUTHOR OF "ADVENTURES IN THE PACIFIC," ETC.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1847.

91.0.8
Cou/Adv
38330

PREFACE.

THE reader is aware that over the great extent of the Pacific Ocean, both north and south of the Equator, there are hundreds of islands of the most luxuriantly vegetating aspect appearing on its surface;—some in isolated positions, others grouped together in such beauty, that the mariner who has gazed on the sky and sea alone for months feels an inexpressible pleasure in looking long and earnestly on these tropical gardens, as his vessel closes in with any of them for the purposes of temporary rest, refreshment for the ship's crew, or trading with the natives.

There are many unacquainted with the fact that a very extensive trade of a lucrative kind is carried on between the various ports on the western coasts of North and South America, the various islands in

the Pacific, and the coasts of China, Australia, &c. The Georgian Islands and the Chilian ports are systematically connected in trading transactions. The Sandwich Islands and the Californian ports are equally so engaged. The Georgian Islands export arrow-root, cocoa-nut oil, sugar, pearls, pearlshell, &c. Valparaiso affords them generally a good market, and sends back to Tahiti, &c. groceries, hardware, clothing, &c. The Sandwich Islands are now a mercantile depôt of considerable importance. Hundreds of merchants from all parts of the world reside there; their import is received from many ports in the United States of America and those of Great Britain and her colonies; but a great amount of the Sandwich Islands' import is derived from various traders who pass years of their lives from one island to another, at great personal risk, as their transactions are generally with savage natives and outcast white men. They procure at these various islands arrow-root, oil, beche-de-mer, dyewoods, tortoiseshell, cured fish, &c. These articles are disposed of at once either for cash or goods. If the latter, a vessel will take in brandy,

rum, wines, teas, sugars, iron tools, and all kinds of hardware, and proceed to the ports in California, and return to the islands with deals, wheat, Indian corn, furs, &c. The Chinese merchant will take away the furs, beche-de-mer, tortoiseshell, pearl, &c. Sugars and various articles of Pacific Ocean Islands' collection will reach Australia, Van Diemen's Land, &c., and no doubt return with an item from some of old England's factories. In fact, the Pacific Ocean trading is an occupation peculiar to itself, and one from which great emolument is derived; indeed, it is of so much value to the bold adventurers engaged in it, that they have systematically concealed a correct account of it from the home ports, lest their profitable transactions should be interfered with by too many coming out. The captains of the various vessels of all sizes are generally the owners, or the supercargo is, and they steer from island to island just as they please, or according to the intelligence they obtain from another vessel engaged in the same pursuits. These vessels are all well armed and well manned, and any of them are quite capable of defending themselves,

and repelling the attacks of any number of savages they may have to encounter. In getting off the various articles of trade, in wooding and watering, &c., although it is generally far from the captain's wish, a misunderstanding frequently happens between the natives and crews of the vessels; and as the savages of the various islands are quick in their movements to revenge what they deem either insult, injury, or unfair trading, an instantaneous attack is made on the vessel, which, in most cases, results in defeat of the savages with severe loss. These frequent hostilities between the traders and barbarians make this trading a precarious business; indeed, I may add, a dangerous one. There are few of these trading vessels ever return with their cargoes to the coast of the Americas, China, Sandwich Islands, or Australia, without having frequent fights with the savages, and there are some of them, who have reckless captains and crews on board, that never can end a trading transaction with the natives without a "row."

I am thus explicit, as I wish the reader of this book to be in possession of facts that he may

not have previously known, as it will account for the reason of trading-vessels visiting these remote places, and transacting business with the heathen and barbarian.

Those who have read my book, termed "Adventures in the Pacific," will recollect, that I accounted for my cruise of adventure (if I may so call it) only as far as Tahiti. I now proceed from that to Christmas Island: in again on the Western Coast of South America; Gulf of Panama, islands, &c.; coast and interior of California; sail westerly across the North Pacific Ocean; pass the meridian of 180° into East longitude, transact business, and engage in stirring incidents, at the Kingsmill Islands; New Ireland; New Hanover; New Britain; the Willaumez's Islands; the Great Island of New Guinea, and the New Hebrides; return to Tahiti; sail over to Eimeo; call at Easter Island; double that cold region Cape Horn, and home again in the early part of the year 1836. The indigenous productions, both animal and vegetable, of the various places visited, will be found in plain terms, as I have avoided scientific technicalities altogether; and the manners and

customs of the various savage tribes, in peace and war, will be explained by the incidents in which we were engaged with them. A sailor's career on a long voyage, and his frequent ludicrous acts, will occur here and there through the book; but I have excluded any profane or immoral observations, that I am sorry to say not unfrequently escape the lips during a maritime life. I have only to add that this book contains an authentic narration of what I observed, and what I was engaged in, as I have generally made it my rule to trust very little to hearsay details.

J. C.

CONTENTS

OF

THE FIRST VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Ship sails from Tahiti. — The sailor's cruise on shore, and its results. — Fall in with an American whale ship. — See a large sperm whale. — Animated chase by both ships. — Spirited conduct of the boat's crews. — Our success in the capture of the fish. — One of the boats stove by the whale. - - - - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

Cutting in the whale. — Sea fowl. — Vast shoals of sharks, their ferocity. — Removal of the blubber completed. — Sail northerly. — Animated appearance of the sea. — Rough weather. — A tropical moonlight night at sea. — Sight the Marquesas Islands. — Strange sounds heard about the ship. — A native in distress. — Land the native at Fetuiva. — Gratitude of the Marquesans. — Sail northerly. — Sea fowl and shoals of fish about. — Cross the Equator. — Leakage of the sperm oil discovered. — Steer for Christmas Island. 12

CHAP. III.

Anchor at Christmas Island. — Its general aspect. — Land on the island. — Land crabs retreat to cover. — A sailor's idea of them. — A Cape Horn anecdote introduced. — The boat's crew collecting cocoa-nuts. — Their remarks. — Agility of a Tahitian native. — Return to the ship for the night. — Sporting on the land, and in the Lagoon. — Catch a number of turtle. — Arrangements of the seamen on shore at night. — Their plan for the surprise and capture of them on the beach. — The turtle's method of defence from his pursuers. — Sail from Christmas Island. - - Page 22

CHAP. IV.

Steer close on the wind for the Coast of America. — Sight Cape Blancho, the Southern point of the Gulf of Guayaquil. — Anchor at Tacames. — Melancholy news. — Ship Charles, of London. — Her captain and surgeon drowned. — Aspect of the land from anchorage. — Heavy breakers near the shore. — Our landing. — Description of the town of Tacames. — Peculiarly constructed houses. — Hire an Indian guide. — Prepare for the woods. — Jack and I start off for a hunt. — The jungle. — Monkeys. — Open forest. — Green canopy. — The howling of wild beasts. — Search cover. 33

CHAP. V.

The ravine. — A wild horse pursued by tigers. — Tiger's attack. — Jack's conflict with the other wounded beast. — Jack and I proceed to an Estancia or farm. — Hospitable reception. — A tiger visits the farm-yard, and is killed. —

Ferocity of the American tiger. — A curious musical instrument. — Jack's proficiency in performing on it. — Passage in a canoe up the river. — Luxuriant vegetation. — Parrots, kingfishers, mosquitos, &c., &c. — Purchase of a canoe. — Proceed up the river. — Solitude of the scene. — Richness of the forest. — Noise of wild beasts. — Luxuriant vegetation. - - - - - - Page 44

CHAP. VI.

Arrive at the hut of a Negro. — He accompanies us through the forest. — Ascend a mountain range. — Fine landscape. — Fall in with game. — The black's eagerness. — A few deer killed. — Jack shoots a tiger. — Return to the Negro's hut. — The black's pathetic account of himself. — His former slavery in Peru. — His escape from it with his wife and child. — Their sufferings. — The brutality of slave masters. — Smoking amongst the Spaniards. — Jack's partial account of himself. — A Pacific Ocean trick. — Kidnapping men to make up a ship's crew. - - - - 56

CHAP. VII.

Ship captains and natives. — The Negro proceeds down the river to Tacames with the dead deer. — Jack and I embark in our canoe, and paddle on up the stream. — The river. — Alligators. — Roaring of wild animals in the bush. — Beauty of the river scenery. — Disembark from the canoe, and conceal it in a small cove. — Enter the forest, and continue our hunt. — Benighted in the woods. — Sleep up in a tree, out of the reach of wild beasts. — Annoyance of the wood-tick. — Reach the main road between Esmareldas and the city of Quito. —

Open country. — Rich farms, gardens, &c. — Arrive at the village of Tolo. — Kind reception. — Jack assumes consequence as my interpreter. — Description of Tolo and its inhabitants. — Their wish for me to bleed them all. — Express from Rio Verde. — A revolution on a small scale. — Soldiers without pay turn banditti. — Inhabitants of Tolo hide their money. — The town put into a state of defence. Page 69

CHAP. VIII.

The plunderers approach Tolo: their warm reception. — Don Pechos's arrangements for defending the town. — The attack. — Gallant defence. — Regular cavalry in chase of the revolutionists. — Some of the banditti shot, others wounded and prisoners. — Jack's eye to business: makes a good thing of the affair. — Leave Tolo and paddle down the river. — Arrive again at the black's hut. — Proceed down with the stream. — Our wooding party. — Arrive at the ship. — The town of Tacames in confusion by revolutionists. — Pet monkeys and parrots on board. — Sail from Tacames. — Jack on board as passenger. — Gulf of Panama. — Heavy rains. — A general washing-day on board. — "I'sl Malpello," or "Baldhead" island. — Description of it. — Fishing for rock cod. 80

CHAP. IX.

Anchor at Cocos island. — A battle between the pet monkeys on board: their owners take their respective parts in it. — Aspect of the islands from anchorage. — Peculiarity in the landscape. — Land on the island. — Find three runaway sailors on it. — Their miserable state. — Our captain consents to take them on board. — Watering and wooding gangs. —

Our passenger, Jack and I prepare for an excursion through the island. — We are landed in the westernmost bay. — Description of it. — Proceed inland. — Rugged travelling. — A tropical flower. — Fall in with wild goats, shoot one. — Jack's opinion of the island. — A dark ravine. Page 92

CHAP. X.

Arrive at the summit of the island. — Enchanting view. — Discover a lake. — The calmness of the scene. — A solitary man joins us. — His kind welcome. — Description of him. — Go with him to his house. — Its concealed position. — An account of the interior of it. — The hermit's canoe. — His garden. — The King of the island and Jack enjoy themselves. — The Hermit's, alias Thomas Stevenson's history. — His shipwreck on the island, &c. — Jack's mirth. — I take an excursion on the lake in a canoe. — Solitude of the place. — Evening scene. - - - - - 104

CHAP. XI.

The rising sun, and gaiety of a morning scene in Stevenson's valley. — Fishing on the lake. — Tour through the Island continued. — The south side. — Wild goats and hogs. — Arrive at a colony or encampment of the crew of Stevenson's late vessel, the Juan. — Their costume, habitations, gardens, &c. — Stevenson's reason for not residing with his people. — Continue our exploring excursion. — Arrive in sight of the ship. — Take leave of the eccentric Stevenson. — Sperm whales in the offing. — Get under weigh, and set all sail in chase of them. — Capture of whales. — A last look at Cocos island, and further information about Stevenson. - - - - - - 114

CHAP. XII.

Steering northerly. — Cruise for whales. — The Gulf of California. — Anchor at Bay St. Lucas. — Dón Fishera, alias Mr. Fisher. — How he became owner of the Estancia of St. Lucas. — Costume of the people. — The village. — Extensive butchering establishment. — Vultures, crows, hogs, &c. — Their usefulness. — Obtain an Indian guide. — Start off through the plain with Jack and the guide. — The jungle. — Hunting the deer and peuma. — Return to the village and hire horses. — Californian saddles, and wooden stirrups. — Off again for the interior. — The peuma, skunk, pigeons, squirrels, rattlesnakes, &c. — Ascend the hilly range. — The Berendos. — Fall in with a bullock attacked by wolves.

Page 127

CHAP. XIII.

Encamp in an Indian wigwam.— Californian Indians, variety of tribes and languages. — Morning hunt. — Continue our route northerly. — A rugged country. — Night encampment. — Scarcity of water. — Return by another route. — Hunt through the country. — Arrive at St. Lucas. — Indications of rough weather. — The ship gets under weigh. — A storm. — Its fury. — The sailor in a storm, and a calm. — Enter the Californian Gulf again.— The coast on either side.— Turtle. — Cruising in the Gulf. — Islands of Tiburon, Catalina, St. Jose, &c. — Leave the Gulf. — Cruise on the coast of Upper and Lower California.— St. Diego. — Land Jack at Monteroy.—He goes in a boat up the Buenaventura river. 135

CHAP. XIV.

Cruise again for whales. — My sleeping on deck at night; its results. — Rheumatism.— The Captain's jocose remarks on it.

— Run into the Bay of St. Francisco. — Anchor off Yerba Buena. — I go on shore and take up quarters with the Padre of the mission. — The ship Stratford ready for sea. — Consultation with the captain. — His kindness. — Resolve to remain on shore for awhile. — Kindness of the Padre. — Improvement in health. — Try the Temescal, or Indian hot-air bath. A description of it. — Its general use. — The Indian method of using it. — I am nearly well again. — The Padre's good humour. - - - - - Page 145

CHAP. XV.

The Padre and I visit the missions round the Bay of St. Francisco. — General description of them. — The great number of Indians, and vast herds of cattle attached to them. — Trade between California and the Sandwich Islands. — Early establishment of the missions. — Difficulties encountered. — Hostility of the Indians. — A bold act of a Padre. — Cessation of hostilities, and final establishment of the missions. — Gangs of runaway sailors, marines, and outcast Indians, turn robbers. — Their leaders. — Small parties of marauders. — Their attacks on travellers and hunters. — The lasso; an account of it and its use. — A method of avoiding the lasso. - 154

CHAP. XVI.

The fur hunters, and the plundering gangs. — A bold hunter, in company with a comercianto or merchant, defeats robbers; an account of the affair. — The Padre's first method of converting the Indians. — Indians come in at last, and attach themselves to the missions. — The establishments are enlarged. The Padre's present influence over the Indians. — His method of driving them to prayers. — The leisure hours of the In-

dians.—Their games and amusements.—The sabbath at the missions.—Bull, bear, badger, and dog-fighting, &c.—Animated appearance of the Indians. - - Page 163

CHAP. XVII.

Splendid costume of the Indians.—General costume of the Californian residents.—Forests on the coast of California.—An account of the wild fowl in the woods, and fish in the rivers.—Directions for sportsmen in California.—Their proper "fit out."—Camping out at night, the fun of it.—Good living.—Bears visit the encampment.—The water-fowl.—Some account of the wild beast of the woods.—The grisly bear, its strength and ferocity.—A hunter and I attacked by a grisly bear.—Dangerous conflict with him.—The hunter ends the battle.—His opinion of the dead bear.—He cuts off the claws for a necklace. - - 172

CHAP. XVIII.

The hunter skins the bear.—We move on.—Wolves attack the bear's carcase.—The hunter obliged to throw away the skin, as the peumas were following us.—The naturalist in California.—The insects.—The antiquarian.—Magnificent ruins of ancient cities.—Remarks.—My last hunt in California.—More hunters join us.—Passage down the Sacramento river.—Indecisions.—Arrival of the Brigantine Hound at St. Francisco.—An old acquaintance.—Captain Trainer.—The Captain's intended cruise to the westward.—I make arrangements to accompany him in the Hound.—We sail from St. Francisco. - - - 181

CHAP XIX.

Steer westerly. — Fine weather. — Cross the meridian of 180°. — Steer for the Kingsmill Islands. — Taputonea, or Drummond's Island. — Anchor off the town of Utiroo. — Aspect of the island. — Its productions. — An account of the natives and their costume. — Comical war dress. — Denseness of the population. — Cannibalism. — Polygamy. — The Hound tabooed. — Danger in trading at these islands. — Old Wowma: his method of salutation. - - - Page 189

CHAP. XX.

A Sandwich Island native acts as interpreter. — My landing on the island. — Young Hoonoo: his influence. — A native mess. — Song and dance. — Hoonoo allots a house to me. — Its internal arrangements. — Native lamp. — Merriment of the natives. — Half a dozen of young girls enter my dormitory. — Their mirth. — Their object in visiting me. — I take refuge in Hoonoo's house for the night. — Abundance of poultry. — Town of Poona. — Cock-fighting. - 198

CHAP. XXI.

A grand council of war chiefs. — The council-house. — Costume of the warriors. — Irritability of some chiefs. — Hatta's party. — The business of the council ends in a row. — The interpreter and I escape from the council-house. — Hatta's death. — Wowma addresses the excited crowd. — A compromise. — Excursion through the island. — A cannibal's necklace. — A further account of the natives. — Return to the north end of the island. — Natives strip me of my clothing. —

Arrive at the town of Utiroo. — Escape from the natives. — Go on board the Hound in comical costume. Page 207

CHAP. XXII.

The boat's crew on shore attacked by natives. — Their escape. — Treachery of the islanders. — Daring attack on the vessel. — Bold attempt of the natives to board the Hound. — Their repulse. — We sail from Taputonea, or Drummond's Island. — Deep-sea burial. — Disposal of the effects of the dead. — An anecdote. — A mixture of melancholy and superstition. — A ludicrous scene. — Cause of it. - - - 217

CHAP. XXIII.

Apamamo, or Simpson's Island. — Some account of it. — Kuria. — Great population. — An account of the natives. — Their cock-fighting. — Grades of rank amongst them. — Their respective privileges. — How a chief manages a number of wives. — The island of Tarutarii. — White men living with natives. — The island called Mankii, agreeable savages. — General account of, and remarks on, the Kingsmill Island group. - - - - - 230

CHAP. XXIV.

Sail westerly. — The sea. — New Ireland. — Appearance of the land from the ship. — Running along-shore. — Discover a bay, and come to an anchor. — Natives come off to the Hound. — A description of them. — The King comes off. — His appearance and ornaments. — The interpreter, Thomas Manners. — His history, present costume, and high rank. — Boolooma and Manners dine with us. — Amusing scene. 238

CHAP. XXV.

I resolve to go on shore.— The king's son Rownaa.— An account of his person. — Boolooma tabooes my person and gun. — Curious ceremony. — Land amongst the natives. — Annoyance from the crowds of savages. — Rownaa's interference. — His comicality of action. — Arrive at the town. — The grand council-house. — Rownaa leaves me in it. — His return with refreshments. — Native food. — Their method at meals. — Rownaa's appetite. — His ideas of hospitality. — His warriors. - - - - - Page 248

CHAP. XXVI.

Description of the town. — The surrounding scenery. — Presents to Boolooma and Rownaa. — Pass through the town into the interior. — Rich vegetation. — The river. — Strange scenery. — The land birds. — Arrive at an outpost. — Warriors on guard. — Their paint and arms. — Capture of two canoes. — Proofs of cannibalism. — Visit another outpost. — Late skirmish with the enemy. — Four men taken off prisoners. — Savage appearance of the wounded warriors. — This station. — Its strong position. — Scenery. — Distant view of the enemies' outposts. - - - 260

CHAP. XXVII.

Civil wars in New Ireland. — Power and despotism of the chiefs. — Method of levying warriors. — Polygamy. — Attachment of the tribes to their chief. — His interference in their domestic affairs. — Ludicrous punishment for a scamp, or

lazy fellow. — A chosen band of warriors start off to rescue their men from the enemy. — Rownaa and I join the expedition. — First sight of the prisoners and the enemy. — The dance and the fire. — Our advantageous position. — The attack. — The Rescue. — The Ravine. — Charge of the enemy to regain prisoners. — Our cover. — One of our chiefs wounded. — Our position attacked. — Sharp conflict. — Our critical situation. — Final charge of the enemy. — Their repulse and retreat. - - - - Page 275

ADVENTURES

ON

THE WESTERN COAST

OF

SOUTH AMERICA.

CHAPTER I.

SHIP SAILS FROM TAHITI. — THE SAILOR'S CRUISE ON SHORE, AND ITS RESULTS. — FALL IN WITH AN AMERICAN WHALE SHIP. — SEE A LARGE SPERM WHALE. — ANIMATED CHASE BY BOTH SHIPS. — SPIRITED CONDUCT OF THE BOATS' CREWS. — OUR SUCCESS IN THE CAPTURE OF THE FISH. — ONE BOAT STOVE BY THE WHALE.

THE ship Stratford being well clear of the Georgian Islands, she was steered to the northward with a fresh breeze from the south-east. This was for the purpose of searching for more whales, as the ocean surrounding these islands for hundreds of miles is considered "good whaling ground." It generally requires two

or three days after leaving port to refresh the men properly, so that they may possess their usual activity in chasing the sperm whale. This may sound strange in the ears of a landsman, who knows nothing of the "nature of Jack." Therefore in explanation I must say that sailors are accustomed to strict regularity on board, and, with the exception of the occasional excitement of their avocations at sea, all goes on as regularly as the works of a good chronometer.

When the ship is in harbour, the seamen are generally, and consistently with the work to be executed on board, allowed to be a good deal of the time on shore, and enjoy what are emphatically called "liberty days;" at least such is generally the case with such a ship as ours, that has been months at sea without relaxation. Such a course is absolutely necessary to keep the men healthy and free from scurvy. However, these liberty days are always a source of actual fatigue to poor Jack, who generally lives in extremes both on sea and land. At sea it is either plenty of grub or short allowance, calms or gales of wind; sometimes little or nothing to do, at others the energies of the frame tested to the utmost.

On shore they dash at once into all kinds of excesses without any intermission, and when all is over and the ship under weigh, they find that their cruise

on land has greatly fatigued them, and that they have been well plucked of their last dollar before they came on board. I say it requires two or three days to overcome all the fatigue and vexation that invariably follow such extremes, so that it is a generally understood thing to keep the ship dogging on under easy sail to allow them to recover, and to carefully place the fresh provisions and vegetables so that we can have them as long as possible.

When we were four days out to the northward of the islands I have mentioned, and every thing in perfect order on board, early in the day one of the look-outs at the mast-head sang out — "Sail, ho!" "Where away?" "On the weather beam, Sir." "Can you make out which way he is standing?" "He looks as if he headed right for us." Our worthy skipper here took a walk up stairs, or, in other words, ascended the rigging and seated himself on the main-top-gallant-cross-trees.

"On deck there!" "Sir?" "Keep the ship close to the wind." "Ay, ay, Sir," responded the officer. On we went easily for some time, the sail to windward apparently steering fair for us. We could now see her lower sails from the deck. Suddenly she altered her course, and, getting a more broadside view of her, saw at once she was an

American whale-ship chasing whales. "Have the boats all ready for instant lowering," sang out the captain. "Ay, ay, Sir," responded the whole crew. All eyes were now strained in every direction to see where the whale or whales were. Every voice was hushed and nothing was heard save the splashing of the water under the ship's bows.

"On deck there!" "Sir?" "The first man that sees the whales I will give a jacket and trousers." "Ay, ay, Sir," again from the men, who were mostly here and there up the rigging. A Tahitian, who was one of our crew, and who had the look-out at the fore-top-gallant-mast-head, sang out lustily, "Dere him blows!" "Where?" "Dere, Sir," pointing on the weather bow. "Dere again." The captain adjusted the glass to his eye, and instantly roared out, "A large whale heading right for us! Stand by the boats there."

The skipper descended now to the main-top. The men were all excitement. Most of them threw off their shirts, leaving on only their trousers. The whale was coming down at a steady rate, and the American ship, under a crowd of sail, in chase. The skipper addressed the men from what they called his pulpit, the main-top, and said, "Now, my lads, we have a fair chance of the whale with that ship; let

us see who will first dart an iron into him. Back the main-yard." "Ay, ay, Sir." "Keep an eye on the ship's signals when you are off." "Ay, ay, Sir." The whale was now about two miles off, and a noble-looking fellow he was. "Lower away four boats." Splash went the boats into the water, and the stout ashen oars were fairly doubling with the exertion the men made.

It was a time of anxious excitement. The Yankee's boats were also down, and their chances appeared equal. Our boats required no signal from the ship to guide them, as it was quite evident they saw their game. The ship was yet lying still with the main-yard aback. From the deck we had now a full view of both the whale and the boats, and all deeply anxious for the moment to strike. The boats at last eased their way in order to steal cautiously on the whale, which still steadily and apparently unawares pursued his course. Just as they had pulled close up to him, and the harpooner stood up with iron in hand to dart, the whale buried his head in the water; up rose the flukes high in the air, gave a very threatening shake, and descended.

A large whale generally sounds from half to three quarters of an hour, so the next business was to fill away on the ships, keep them close to windward, to

prevent them dropping to leeward, and keep a good look-out from the mast-head, to watch where he would break water again. Some of these fish keep the same course under water as on the surface; but as it is a rule with many exceptions, the surface of the water was closely scanned for miles round. As the ship now moved quickly (on a wind) through the water, she soon came up with the boats, two of which were hoisted up, and two taken in tow astern. The American ship also filled away and stood on.

As we were now situated, we had an opportunity also of testing the sailing qualities of the respective ships. On we went "pitching into it like two horses cantering." After having run a short distance on this tack, the ships hove about, each captain endeavouring to out-manœuvre the other, and the crews of both obeying the orders given in strict silence and with increased alacrity. The captain was now pacing the deck and looking round with increasing uneasiness, and at last called the steward to pass him a glass of brandy and water to try what luck that would bring.

This being done, away he tramped up and down again. As the time drew near the eyes of all except the man at the wheel were strained. "Fore and aft there, cover every inch of water with your eyes." "Ay, ay, Sir." "There he blows on the lee

quarter, there again." "Put the helm up, square away the yards, mind the steering of those boats astern, and stand by to cast off," were all orders rapidly given, and as quickly obeyed. The other, I may now call her rival ship, did the same, and both ships were right before the wind under a press of sail, and making the white water fly right and left from their bows. Our ship, from having a bounding stag for a figure-head, rather indifferently carved, indeed resembling more an ass's head than that of a stag, was called familiarly by us the "Jackass," and, by way of a lark, some of our lads tied a bunch of vegetables temptingly before him, to try and verify the old adage of "Persuasion better than force." At all events on we went, whizzing through it, soon showing the other ship our stern.

"Hurra for old England! we have the best of it." The American even set his lower studding-sail, but all would not do. We neared the whale fast; when about half a mile to windward of him, the stern boats were cast off and set their sails to increase their speed; the ship rounded to, lay still, and we dropped two more boats: the other ship by this time passed our stern, rounded to, and lowered his boats, all again having an equal chance of paying their respects to this huge fish; again we had a close

view, boats and fish appeared intermingled. "Now then, my hearties," cried the captain.

In three different boats the boatsteerers stood up to strike; it was a moment of great suspense and excitement; away flew the harpoons from two boats; a tremendous plunge of the fish throwing foam about in all directions, covering and shading all from view with the spray, we could distinguish two or three oars sent high into the air. The disturbed water subsided, and one of our boats was towed along rapidly clear of the throng. "Hurra! hurra! hurra!" burst loudly from those on board our ship: the cheer was wafted to our fast boat, the officer of which acknowledged it by waving his cap three or four times over his head.

The whale now altered his course to windward, and went rapidly through the water; he headed right for our ship, all the rest of the boats pulling as hard as they could after the one fast to the whale; it was certainly a sight highly animating: on he came right for us, causing fresh uneasiness lest he might strike the ship. "Back the head-yards," shouted the captain. On the fish came, his enormous head nearing us every minute. "He's into us! he's into us!" muttered the skipper, turning pale with anxiety. The ship had gathered stern way on her just as he

came up, and he foamed through the water close under the bows. In fact, so close that the iron poles which were sticking in him close to his hump grazed the ship's cutwater. It was an extremely providential escape; if the ship had not stern way at the time he would have stove in the bows.

Such things have been attended with extremely disastrous circumstances before now. The crew of the fast boat was now hauling in the line, and approaching close to the body of the whale. By-and-by the line in the boat was bowed, and the boat ranged up alongside the fish. The officer now handled his lance, pushed it in both hands into him. "Haul in the line again, straighten, dart again, and again;" and a thick spray of florid blood was blown from his spout-hole. "Dart again." A quiver of the flukes. "Stern all;" and the boat slaked her line to get out of the way. The whale was only a short distance off, and bleeding profusely, so that the water in its wake and for some distance around was quite red. It raised its huge body half out of the disturbed water, and gave a heavy plunge. The boat payed out more line to keep further off. The fish then commenced running in a circuit, at a very irregular and rapid rate. Some of the other boats had by this time come up: one of them pulled

too close to the whale, and with a blow from the flukes of the fish was knocked to pieces. After this exploit the whale beat the water furiously, opened his enormous jaws wide, rolled heavily on his side, and died.

The men in the stoven, which was ours, were picked up by the others, and three thundering cheers from both ship and boats ended the conflict. I must here record, that though we took the whale from the other ship, and though we were of rival nations, a hearty good-will prevailed on both sides; our people pleased at their success, the others at our not letting the whale escape. We now made a board or two with the ship to windward to reach the whale, and having put on a heavy fluke rope hauled him alongside, and hoisted up our boats. As the sun was now setting to the westward, in all the beauty of a tropical sky, we made everything "snug" for the night; the American ship crossed our stern, wishing us all joy of our prize, and stood away to the northward: such was the scene and termination of this animated and rival whale chase.

It always seems unaccountable to those looking on, and even to those in the boat, how it can get stoven or broken up, and men knocked out of it by the whale without some serious damage and loss of

life being the consequence; yet so it was with us. The boat's bow was struck clean off, and of course filled with water; the men resorted to the usual method of keeping themselves afloat by supporting themselves on oars until picked up, which they speedily were by the others close to, and, with the exception of the loss of two oars, a bruised arm to one of the men, and the damaged boat, which was afterwards made as good as new on board, we escaped this time.

When all were safe on board, the jabber of the crew was continued till a late hour, and, I may add, until sleep put "a stopper on their tongues." As for our evening in the cabin it was exceedingly lively, the captain, and indeed I may add all the officers, were in high spirits at having secured ourselves, and jockeyed "Jonathan" out of the fish; and with the exception of a few men on deck to look after the whale and ship, all had "turned in" to rest themselves for the following day.

CHAPTER II.

CUTTING IN THE WHALE. — SEA FOWL. — VAST SHOALS OF SHARKS, THEIR FEROCITY. — REMOVAL OF THE BLUBBER COMPLETED. — SAIL NORTHERLY. — ANIMATED APPEARANCE OF THE SEA. — ROUGH WEATHER. — A TROPICAL MOONLIGHT NIGHT AT SEA. — SIGHT OF THE MARQUESAS ISLANDS. — STRANGE SOUNDS HEARD ABOUT THE SHIP. — A NATIVE IN DISTRESS. — LAND THE NATIVE AT FETUIVA. — GRATITUDE OF THE MARQUESANS. — SAIL NORTHERLY. — SEA FOWL AND SHOALS OF FISH ABOUT. — CROSS THE EQUATOR. — LEAKAGE OF THE SPERM OIL DISCOVERED. — STEER FOR CHRISTMAS ISLAND.

In the morning at daylight all hands were called up to cut in the whale, which process I shall say nothing about here, having described it minutely in my preceding work; however, I may say that we were all day surrounded with sea-fowl of various kinds, haglets, petrels, &c., picking up floating particles of blubber as it passed astern, and vast numbers of large blue sharks that kept continually plunging on the fish, and rendered it very unsafe for the man to go down and point the blubber hook into the hole cut for it; indeed we were frequently obliged to jerk

him up off the whale out of their way, by the aid of the rope round him for that purpose, and after a most laborious day's work for all hands, by nightfall we had all the blubber and head of the whale on board, allowing the carcase to sink into the depths of the sea, accompanied by myriads of sharks tearing at it.

When the ship was relieved from the great weight attached to it, she rose buoyantly on every swell, and we filled away under easy sail to the northward, with our fires lighted, boiling out the oil, or extracting it from the blubber. The mere affair of taking this great whale put the entire ship's company in excellent spirits, and the occurrence happening so soon after leaving port, was considered a good omen of future success; even "Jim," the Tahitian, was particularly pleased at having first seen the whale, and afterwards getting his reward of a jacket and trousers, the chief part of our lads solemnly declaring that he would make his fortune before the cruise was out.

Three or four days under easy sail in the fine weather we experienced sufficed to prepare and stow away the oil satisfactorily, and again to have clean, and clear decks. There were vast shoals of albicore, bonitos, &c., with many dolphins around, and ac-

companying the ship; the sea about us was beautifully animated, and we had continued opportunities of catching fresh fish for meals, which was an agreeable change. The last three or four days' work, and the course we were steering, brought us between 9° and 10° south latitude; I may say parallel with, and in sight of, the westernmost of the Marquesas Islands in the afternoon.

The sky became covered with dark heavy clouds, and when the barometer was consulted, it was discovered to have sank from 29½° to 28°, a remarkable change for the instrument in the low latitude we were in; the wind came on in repeated strong blasts, until it increased to a heavy gale with a considerable sea running; the canvass had to be reduced to close-reefed topsails; towards daylight there was brilliant lightning and thunder, with a deluge of rain, which terminated this tropical gale, for about 8 A. M. next morning there was little or no wind, a bright clear sky, and a warm sun shining on us, which totally changed the appearance of everything, and enabled the crew to get all their clothing well dried.

As the day was now clear, we could distinctly see the tops of the high mountains in Nukahiva, one of the Marquesas Islands; there was scarcely a breath of air to steady the sails, and the current appeared

to set strongly to the westward, and off the islands, so that there was not much fear of the ship nearing the land too fast; the watch was set for the night, the remainder went below to their berths, and there was no noise on deck save the occasional tramp of those who had the look out; the night was beautifully clear, the stars twinkled gaily in the firmament, and a bright moon threw its dancing rays on the heaving water: it was one of those tropical nights that a man standing on the deck of a ship feels as if enchantment was abroad, and that there was a new existence, the blue bright glare thrown over every thing, the shadows of mast, spars, and sails, and the silent spectre-like looking figures of the men who patrolled the deck, all contributed to say there was a new world, and no reality, and that all were enveloped either in a dream or by enchantment.

Towards morning the scene as suddenly changed, the moon had disappeared, the stars were nearly all obscured, and darkness reigned around. At about 4 A. M. one of the officers came down to report that some strange sound, resembling a human voice, was repeatedly heard not far from the ship, but that nothing could be seen or made out; and he was positive in his assertion that all the watch on deck had heard it. Both captain and I put on our clothes

hastily and went on deck; we listened for a length of time without hearing anything: as the ship made a little way through the water, the main was thrown aback in order to listen more attentively. After straining our eyes through the night-glasses in the direction pointed out, we were going to denounce it as the Flying Dutchman, or something of the kind, when a hoarse guttural shout assailed our ears; some of the oldest hands in the ship remained transfixed and powerless: again it was repeated, though nearer, and again all was still; by-and-by a slight splashing sound was conveyed to the ship, something like a log of wood was seen through the gloom, and the word "Pihii" (ship) was uttered as if from one in pain.

"A native in distress," said the captain as he withdrew the night-glass from his eye; "a crew for the larboard quarter boat to pick him up." The words banished superstition, and the men instantly threw off their jackets to obey the dictates of humanity, through the orders given. It was yet intensely dark, and lanterns were brought to assist in carefully lowering the boat; a few minutes sufficed, however, to get her clear of the ship, and as we could not see her, we passed the time in listening to the clank of the oars, as she pulled away through the gloom; there

could now be only heard, and that occasionally, an odd jerk of the oar in the rullocks of the boat; they were evidently searching for the object of distress; a few minutes more the signal of success was exhibited in the boat, the concealed lantern and a hearty cheer followed, which was loudly responded to from the ship. I may here mention that the lights in lanterns on board the ship and in the boats are generally veiled until the moment they are required, for this reason, that the men can better distinguish objects when all is nearly dark than when a light glared on them, as it renders the obscurity doubly obscure.

One of the ship lanterns was now held up half way up the mizen rigging to direct the boat in the proper direction, which shortly reached the stern of the ship, with a small shattered-looking canoe in tow, with a native and child in it; when they came alongside, the stranger and child were put into the boat, which was hoisted up with a lively hand over hand song; when it was high enough, and resting on the cranes, the man and child were lifted carefully in on deck; one of his arms was dreadfully bruised and swollen, the boy safe, but both in a great state of exhaustion. Their story was soon told: he was a Marquesan, belonging to the Island of Fetuiva, was making an excursion with another man and his child

to one of the neighbouring Islands, when it came on to blow heavily, and drove them off the islands, with scarcely any food in the canoe.

The wind afterwards ceased, when a fresh disaster happened to them; a number of small whales had either been gambling, or running very fast in the night, when they unfortunately came in contact with their frail vessel and capsized it. One of the men was killed and knocked overboard, to be seen no more; the other, with his child fast on his shoulder, contrived to right his canoe, and bale her out with the one, and only paddle he had now, as the other was lost; with this he contrived to make a little way towards the islands, though the current was sadly against him, and he was buried in the depths of despair when our ship was fanning her way close to him. He was a fine powerful-looking man, greatly tattooed over the body. His shoulders, and indeed the most of his body, was greatly scalded from the wash of the sea continually over him, and on placing my hand on his skin, he felt icy cold. We bathed him over with some fresh water, and rolled both him and the poor child, which was about four years old, up in thick blankets, and got them brought down into the cabin; after which, some warm wine and water contributed greatly to recover him. He then

embraced his child, gave his deliverers a long look of deep-felt gratitude, that no painter could depict, nor any pen describe, covered himself up in the blanket, and fell off into a sound sleep.

The canoe was got on board, and in a very shattered condition it certainly was; the outrigger was broken, and had been temporarily lashed; the projecting stern was knocked off; altogether, it was a strange affair for a man to exist on for four days and four nights; they must have passed a fearful time of it. Now, the reader might imagine that this rescued man showed some sign of gratitude to the great Creator for preserving him from his imminent fate; not so, he was a savage, a heathen, and possessed not the slightest idea of Christianity; but if the human eye ever had expression of gratitude, it was peculiarly evident in him, both in the look he bestowed on his child and those who rescued him.

The entire scene was particularly affecting: the peculiarity and superstitious dread at first created; afterwards, when the reality was known, the cheerful and ready willingness of the entire crew to risk anything to relieve a fellow-creature from distress, which I have known well to be the constant and prominent disposition in the sailor; the reddish glare of the lanterns in the ruddy faces of the men, all contri-

buted not a little to give the matter the appearance of a stage performance, rather than a night reality in the Pacific. Both officers and men vied with each other in the care of the stranger. In three or four days more our whaling cruise brought the ship close to their island, and we had the delightful gratification of restoring them to their friends at Fetuiva, who had given them up for lost.

I went in one of our boats with them, and I never beheld such a scene,—yelling, dancing, cutting themselves with shells, and finally striving, in gratitude, to load the boats with hogs and vegetables; but, true to the sailor's character, there was not as much as a cocoa-nut received without ample payment. Feeling the satisfaction of having thus performed our duty, we hoisted up the boats cheerily, and stood away close-hauled on the wind to the northward. We now experienced light winds and delightful weather, the sea all around having a peculiarly animated appearance from the vast quantities of fish of every kind on its surface, such as albicore, bonitos, dolphin, flying-fish, with now and then black-fish playing about, and a variety of small sea-fowl hovering over them. It afforded me no small delight to watch them from the deck for hours together.

We had passed the equator in longitude 157°, got

becalmed for two days, and during that period our oil began to leak out of some of the casks, so that considerable quantities of it was extracted (in a damaged state) from the hold by the ship's pumps. This was a matter of serious moment to every one in the ship, as their share of sperm oil to go off in this way would greatly diminish their pay or profits. Every exertion was made to discover where the leak was, or in which of the tiers it existed, without effect, so that the captain now determined to make the nearest land, for the purpose of breaking out the hold and recoopering the oil casks, a work which never could be properly or safely accomplished at sea. In the afternoon of one of those anxious days, a staggering breeze came down from the south-east, and we made all possible steering N.N.W. for Christmas Island.

CHAPTER III.

ANCHOR AT CHRISTMAS ISLAND, — LAND CRABS RETREAT TO COVER. — A SAILOR'S IDEA OF THEM. — A CAPE HORN ANECDOTE INTRODUCED. — THE BOAT'S CREW COLLECTING COCOA-NUTS. — THEIR REMARKS. — AGILITY OF A TAHITIAN NATIVE. — RETURN TO THE SHIP FOR THE NIGHT. — SPORTING ON THE LAND AND IN THE LAGOON. — CATCH A NUMBER OF TURTLE. — ARRANGEMENTS OF THE SEAMEN AT NIGHT. — THEIR PLAN FOR THE SURPRISE, AND CAPTURE OF THEM ON THE BEACH. — THE TURTLE'S METHOD OF DEFENCE FROM HIS PURSUERS. — SAIL FROM CHRISTMAS ISLAND.

At daylight the land was boldly in sight, distant only a few leagues. As we ran on and neared the land, vast flocks of sea-fowl surrounded the ship, screaming to us loudly their disapprobation of our visit, or a welcome to land, as the case might be. However, on we went, passed the easternmost or weather side of the island, squared the yards, and made a fair wind of it down to the western coast, where we came to an anchor in sixteen fathoms of water, in a deep safe harbour, within half a mile of the shore or beach, on which the sea washed with unusual calmness.

The aspect of the land from our anchorage was particularly pleasing; extensive groves of cocoa-nuts, with tall bushes and occasional grass-plats, met the view in every direction. We could see from the mast-heads a large lagoon in the centre of the island. As we were here we resolved to take every advantage of our visit, and procure cocoa-nuts for our live hogs on board, also some turtle and fish, for which this island is chiefly frequented by whale ships and others. As the necessary work had now begun on board, and the captain being anxious to inspect it himself, he told me to occupy myself by taking a boat with a few of the idlers every day and night, if I liked, to try and get whatever I could off. I felt highly pleased at receiving this pleasant instruction from my friend the captain, and the reader may rest assured that I lost no time in ordering the boat, and that her crew lost no time in getting into her, for considerable amusement and variety were anticipated.

The boat was swept briskly towards the beach, and as she neared the land and eased her way, the lads in her turned round their heads to see what I was laughing heartily at, when one of the party roared out, "Halloo! here's a whole colony of jack in the boxes!" (a term given by sailors to the land-crab.) Certainly there was a vast number of

them, and extremely ludicrous it was to see them cantering off from the approaching boat up amongst the grass and bushes, giving in miniature a fair representation of a two-wheeled covered vehicle trotted off by a lame horse, and bobbing quickly as it went along.

As the men were hauling the boat up on the beach out of the water, an opinion was ventured as to what they originally were. One thought they were a party of old rascally Spaniards who got lost, found their way here, were transformed into crabs, and condemned for ever to carry a shell, and to change it too for a fresh heavy one when the old one became too light a weight. Others that they were marines; and they certainly had a strange look as they rattled off, jostling each other as they went along.

This opinion of the men here brings the remark, or rather wit, of an Irish sailor, whom we were giving a passage round the Horn. There was a large albatross of very antiquated appearance sailing along in our wake. The captain called the Irishman aft. "Come here, Paddy, and take a look at St. Patrick." Pat did look, and with a keen half wink and a stare at the skipper said, "I think, with every respect to you, Sir, he looks more like an ould South Sea captain." Three or four that were near the party at the time

nearly exploded with a laugh at the hit. It was taken well, however, and the captain told Paddy he beat him this time; ordered him a glass of grog to refresh his wit for the next turn, and told him to go forward. It was, however, poor Paddy's last. He joined an American ship we spoke the next day, and by a sea that struck her two days afterwards he was carried away on the boiling wave and seen no more.

Now for a drink of cocoa-nut milk. We all went into a grove of the trees, and had a look up at the branches, for there the nuts are in bunches at the stems of the immense and peculiar leaf. A native of Tahiti, who was one of the boat's crew, chose one that was a little inclined by the wind, and up he went steadily, but gracefully, about sixty feet, and when he got well nested amongst the leaves, he sang out, "Ita miti," no good. Of course he saw no young nuts in his nest, but quickly enough the large old ones came thumping down round us. The bunch was a large one, and they came down singly. "Why, they look old enough from their size, but there's no end to them," says one. "I'm blowed if they ain't a growing for him," said another. "He's in his plantation," added a third, and a fourth ended by saying, "There's no use in gaping at that brown thief up there, just as if he was robbing a bird's nest, heaving

down all day them old nuts. Why, we'll never get them broken up for the hogs. Let's have a shy at the trees with the axes." Agreed on this point.

So to work two axes went, a sailor going to cut down trees in a wood. They had only to take off their caps, for a shirt, trousers, and a pair of shoes is the costume for the occasion. The cocoa-nut tree is by no means a soft wood, so the lads who undertook the work found it a tough job. "I think, Jack, we may as well shift hands." "Why," exclaimed the other, "the face is nearly off my axe." A looker-on said, "Well, I suppose before the tree is down we may have to go off to the ship for the grinding-stone for the axes." A puff of wind at this moment bore down the head of the tree, and it fell to the ground with a crash, to the great relief of the party, but bringing with it only five nuts. A look at one another and a laugh. "This is wig-making with a vengeance!" "We'll fill the ship in no time. Two men, two axes gapped, half an hour's work, and five nuts!" "Ay," said the other, "that fellow up in the rookery there is heaving them down yet. Let's rest ourselves."

And so they did, and smoked away, cracked jokes, whilst the native was up in another tree, quietly and coolly pelting the earth with old and (what was now wished for by us all) young nuts. They were green,

about the size of a goose's egg, and easily pierced or opened with the jack-knife, affording at once a delicious drink, and one that would not inebriate. There may be also a portion of the juice coagulating around in the shell, which in appearance resembles the white of an egg half-boiled. This may be scooped out, and is very agreeable. We had now nearly nuts enough for this boat-load, and as our Tahitian approached the party, they very politely, and in very humorous manner presented him with a pipe and tobacco as a reward for his very valuable interference from saving us being well laughed at on our arriving alongside the ship with a cargo of five nuts, and spoiling two axes in getting them!

The nuts were now brought to where the boat lay: she was of course launched into the water previous to loading, which is a precaution always attended to, in order that she may not get strained, or otherwise damaged; the nuts were put in, which filled the boat, a few small bundles of grass over all for the goats we had on board; erect in the stern was a tall leafy branch of a bush as our flagstaff, — and with this triumphant cargo we pulled off to the ship, one of the crew all the while singing a song he heard once in old Wapping. Having got our boat-load up, and the boat herself on her berth on the cranes, we had

the gratification to hear the call to supper, which all sailors, and indeed many landsmen, relish much. The shades of the night now shed their soothing influence over animate and inanimate nature, and in our little world (under the protecting influence of the Creator) man reposed.

For three days the work went on as usual on board, and at last, to the satisfaction of all concerned, the damage to the cargo of sperm oil was discovered in the ground tier of casks, one of which was found to be crushed by the weight upon it, assisted, no doubt, by a heavy lurch of the ship at sea. The cargo, as it came up on deck, was well recoopered and rapidly restored; all this while I was amusing myself on shore, with my boat's crew, bringing off cocoa-nuts, &c., occasionally ploughing through the Lagoon with the boat, fishing both by spear and line, occasionally getting a shot at a curlew, or on the land at a quail.

It happened to be good moonlight during our stay here, and we had the additional fun of turning and bringing off a good many fine turtle. To the reader, who is not aware of the last-mentioned operation, it may not be amiss to mention it here. Some time before sunset two or three boats, with their crews, will land on a beach, at respective stations, haul the

boats a considerable distance up from the water; they are then turned keel up; a few forked sticks are now procured, stuck firmly in the sand or earth beside the boats; one side of the boat is then raised, and the gunwale rest on those forks.

This forms the turtler's look-out house, and as sailors, after a hard day's work, like and do throw themselves on their "beam-ends," they generally make the earth or sand underneath the boat as comfortable as possible, by strewing it with leaves and grass. The men then rove about, passing the time as agreeably as possible, until the time arrives for to look out, which is when night has perfectly set in; they then retire to their shelter and keep a close watch on the beach, as far as a bright moonlight night will let them.

By-and-by, when all is still, save the wash on the beach, or the rustling of the bushes behind them by the breeze, they here and there see a dark object coming, or rather waddling out of the water upon the beach, with either a kind of a sigh or low grunt. There is now no talking, the men being perfectly silent: when a sufficient time has been given to allow the turtle to be in a state of repose, the word is given, "Turn:" every man having previously marked, by agreement, his object of attack, makes a dash from

his concealment, lays quick hold of the rim of the turtle, and jerks him over on his back, then runs at another and acts in the same manner, until all that are up are nearly turned and safe, as they then cannot move. The best of the sport now comes, after those that have taken the alarm, and are endeavouring to escape into the water: there is now no silence, all is uproar; those who are close on the turtle, and following right after him, generally get what the inexperienced never think of.

The turtle, in the act of running, when danger is after him, makes use of each flipper alternately in dashing sand to an incredible height and distance behind and around him, endangering the eyes of his pursuers, if the latter are not particularly careful. I have seen the eyes of the incautious nearly filled, and required a vast deal of trouble to get it out, and afterwards save the eyes from the extensive inflammation produced. To avoid this calamity a plan is practised, and that is, to have two or three pair of granes somewhere at hand, that they can be quickly picked up and darted into the poor turtle thus endeavouring to escape. The line attached to the granes is then laid hold of by a couple of hands, and the object of attack is pulled quickly far up from the water's edge.

However, by this method few are taken, for before the granes can be obtained in the indifferent light, the turtle is in the water and escaped, and when they are so taken, they are the first used on board, the Turtle being pierced by the grane through the shell and body: those taken in the usual way, every reader is aware of how long they keep alive by damping them frequently. The turtling parties are frequently out until near daylight, as the turtles do not always come upon the beach when it suits the wish or convenience of those on the look-out; however, from the anticipation of the victory over those creatures, it is really exciting sport.

The turtles being now all on their backs, and kicking away with their flippers, may do so for a time, until the men go up to the bushes and light a regular bonfire, which had been previously prepared. The sailors assembled round those fires have a very picturesque effect, their costume and swarthy visages, adorned with an abundance of hair, some smoking, others singing, nearly all merry, except some poor fellow who has had the misfortune to mismanage the turning of his turtle, and was endeavouring to wash the sand out of his eyes.

At daylight the scene is changed, the fires are deserted, the boats are loaded, sometimes with many,

at others with few turtle, and they all pull off to the ships, singing more cheerily from an uninhabited island like this, than from the most agreeable house-of-call for them in the world; and let no one tell me, after many scenes of this kind I have enjoyed, that grog or any other stimulant is necessary to keep sailors awake, or excite them to duty or amusement.

I felt a degree of interest in having a ramble through this island, and (though I walked through an uninhabited spot) that I trod on historic ground, it having been discovered and made a resting-place by our great Cook. With respect to the ship, the goats on board were quite pleased with the bundles of grass, the hogs with the cocoa-nuts, the men with the turtles and their run on shore; so we took up our anchor and stood off the land, accompanied for a short distance by numbers of sea-fowl, to have, as it were, a last look at such queer visitors as they must have thought us.

CHAPTER IV.

STEER CLOSE ON THE WIND FOR THE COAST OF AMERICA.— SIGHT CAPE BLANCHO, THE SOUTHERN POINT OF GULF OF GUAYAQUILL. — ANCHOR AT TACAMES. — MELANCHOLY NEWS. — SHIP CHARLES OF LONDON. — HER CAPTAIN AND SURGEON DROWNED. — ASPECT OF THE LAND FROM ANCHORAGE. — HEAVY BREAKERS IN-SHORE. — OUR LANDING. — DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWN OF TACAMES. — PECULIARLY CONSTRUCTED HOUSES. — HIRE AN INDIAN GUIDE. — PREPARE FOR THE WOODS. — JACK AND I START OFF FOR A HUNT. — THE JUNGLE.— MONKEYS.— OPEN FOREST. — GREEN CANOPY. — THE HOWLING OF WILD BEASTS. — SEARCH COVER.

We had now an excellent supply of everything necessary on board, such as fruit and vegetables of all the tropical kinds, a number of hogs, poultry, &c.; and it was determined, before going further to the westward, to try once more and search for whales on the coast of the Americas, or, what is usually termed by whalers, the "off-shore ground;" so that the ship was now kept close to the wind, which blew a steady stiff breeze from the south-east, and consequently our course was to the northward and eastward. Away we went ploughing through it, with our mast-head continually manned, and a strict look-out for whales.

When in the latitude of 30° N., after a hard chase of four hours, we managed to capture a large and a small whale: the latter was a fine fellow, and turned out an unusually great quantity of oil; it was a mere chance that they were taken, as they were running fast to windward, and only that two of the boats chanced to lay right in their way, we would have missed. Beyond the time of cutting in we made no delay, as there were no indications of more fish about. The trade winds clung to us until we reached nearly the latitude of 40° N.; this was unusually far north to feel their influence, and such was the impression created on board, that the most jocose of our officers prognosticated that the jib-boom of the ship would stick in the North Pole before the wind shifted; however, it did shift round, and that suddenly too, and afforded us strong winds and a tumbling sea from the north-west.

This gave us a fair wind, and every advantage was taken of it, as far as regarded crowding sail on the ship. There was scarcely any occurrence worth relating during this passage in-shore, and after a very unsuccessful search for whales, during a four months' cruise, we sighted the continent of South America, and made Cape Blancho, which is the most northern point of Peru, and the most southern of the

Gulf of Guayaquil. Having now ascertained our true position, and that our nautical instruments and chronometers were quite correct, we steered on to the northward, and when abreast of Tacames, (or, as it is sometimes called, Atacemes,) ran in for the purpose of obtaining wood, water, and fruit, and came to an anchor about one mile outside the heavy surf, which breaks heavily on the beach in front of the town.

Here melancholy news awaited our captain, which, to do justice to our crew, threw a gloom over us all, and made the ship for awhile silent and unpleasant. The ship Charles, of London, was two or three miles off under sail, and with her mainyard aback: a boat reached us from her with one of her officers, bearing the sad tidings, that while at anchor here one of the boats, in endeavouring to come off through the surf, by some bad or careless management, was upset, and the captain, surgeon, and one of the crew, were drowned, and that the chief officer, who was now captain, together with the chief part of the crew, were laid up with fever and ague, with scarcely hands enough well on board to work the ship.

You may sympathise with our feelings when I tell you that the captain of the Charles (Captain Butcher) was our captain's (Captain Lock's) brother-

in-law. The surgeon's name I have not entered to record: Captain Lock bore the intelligence in a firm manly manner, and after a little time continued to give the necessary instruction to those on board who were preparing for wooding and watering. The doctor's body was found about four miles further down the shore, floating lightly along with the current, and on examination, his watch and some money were found on him: at the upset of the boat, one of the crew, a native of the Cape de Verd Islands, seized Captain Butcher, who could not swim, and placed him standing on a sand-bank, where he was not more than up to his middle in the water; after being placed thus, as it was thought securely, he was laughing at the rest, floundering in the water, when suddenly, to the amazement of all, he disappeared and was seen no more.

The sand-bank on which he was standing is between the town and mouth of the river, and as ground sharks and alligators abound here, it is more than probable that he was seized under water by the legs, pulled off into the deep water, and devoured by those monsters, as every search afterwards for the body, for miles along the shore, proved fruitless. The people of the Charles were all sick: I went on board, rendered them every professional assistance in

my power, gave them medicine, and the necessary instructions that would be conducive to their recovery, when they made all sail to the westward.

When a soldier is buried on land, after the three rounds being fired over him, and the men marching back to their barracks, the band playing a lively air, the gloom that previously pervaded the party disappears, and nothing more is thought of the matter: such is the case with sailors, and so it was with our men; even the captain, who was most deeply affected by the late melancholy and unexpected intelligence, felt the silence of the men to be too oppressive, and as some heavy water-casks were hoisting out of the hold, he could bear it no longer, and sang out "make a noise there, men," when instant relief and life were given to the ship by the men singing their lively song of —

Oh, roust him up, heighho,
Cheerily, men;
Oh, pull him up, heighho,
Cheerily, men;
Oh, with a will, heighho,
Cheerily, men,
&c. &c. &c.

The water-casks were overboard in the water, made a raft of as usual, and towed away towards the mouth of the river: the wooding party were also

despatched; so I will now endeavour to give the reader some idea of this part of the coast.

Nothing could be more beautiful or refreshing than the appearance of the land from the ship. Where we lay could not be called a harbour; it might, more properly speaking, be termed a road-stead. As the sea view was concealed only on the south side of the anchorage by a high bluff of land, it is quite exposed to the westward and northward, but from those quarters here, the oldest inhabitants say, it never blows.

The spot on which the town is situated is low: I may say scarcely raised above the level of the sea; but at the back of it and all round inland the hills tower one above the other in strange irregularity, and with original picturesque effect. In every direction that the eye may wander, even to the hilly summits, is one dense forest of the most luxuriant appearance; the variety in the colour of the foliage is really enchanting to gaze upon, but the chief mass of it is of a bright green. In approaching the beach fronting the town, for half a mile from the shore, there is to be passed through a surf of a very formidable kind: it begins to rise high a long distance out, and breaks with roaring fury several times before it scatters itself on the beach, and great care must be

taken by any boat's crew going through it, to avoid the disaster that proved so fatal to poor Butcher and his surgeon.

There ought to be a stout experienced man at the steer-oar, as everything then depends in keeping the boat right before the breakers, or straight against them, in effecting a landing or coming off again. Well, we foamed through those breakers in a very dashing manner, and effected our landing with only a fair sprinkling of the surf that boiled high around us. The town consists of only eighteen or twenty houses, of peculiar architecture, situated in an open space, and nearly walled in by an almost impenetrable forest and jungle. The houses, or rather sheds, are about twelve or fourteen feet from the ground, supported on a number of strong posts firmly planted in the earth.

The sides and ends are made entirely of large bamboo cane closely placed together, the roofs are covered with cocoa and other leaves, the floors are laid with light rough boards, and mattings cover the entire of the inside of the house. Hammocks are used for beds, except in a few instances, and a ladder to enter the house, which is always drawn up at night, completes the arrangements of these curious abodes. The object in having the houses so much

elevated from the ground, the ladder to enter them, and to be occasionally removed, is the nocturnal visits of wild beasts, such as the American tigers, jaguars, and the annoyance of the monkeys of a large size.

When standing on the beach, to the left of the town, the entrance to the river is in sight, walled in on the western side of its mouth by high hills covered with timber down to its banks. In going into this river from the ship the boats had not to encounter any surf, as it was outside of the ground swell, and both wood and water were got off with perfect ease and security. By day and by night, while in Tacames, our ears were assailed by the occasional bark or howl of the wild beasts in the surrounding forest. On our arrival here there were a number of the inhabitants attacked with dysentery, and no medical assistance with them, so that my visit was most cordially welcomed, and I took up my abode on shore, at the request of the chief inhabitants. I dosed them well with the necessary medicine, and a few days made a material change in their health and spirits. Indeed, they were very grateful. I had every delicacy that the town afforded placed before me, and they stocked well my purse beside with plenty of doubloons.

Having in my professional capacity acquitted myself very successfully amongst these people, and the most severe cases conquered, I took up my rifle, which I brought on shore, and put it in perfect order, in anticipation of a day's sport in the woods. On the sixth morning of my stay in the town I hired an Indian, who happened to be there at the time, for a guide, and I was particularly fortunate in getting him, as he spoke English with considerable fluency, having served (partly against his will) on board an American ship for some time, where he acquired the short name of "Jack."

Jack had an excellent gun, and knew well how to use it, so that as companion, guide, and guard, he was a useful man. We now prepared for our hunt: first, I placed all the money I had on shore in safe keeping; secondly, some hard-cooked meat and a few sea biscuits into my forage-bag, accoutred on my ammunition in a convenient manner for instant use, and shouldered my gun.

Jack did the same, and off we started, taking a small, indeed the only road that led from the town away into the forest; for two or three miles it was nothing but what is generally termed in England a good broad by-path, with a thick jungle on either side, impenetrable from the luxuriance of the vege-

tation and the vast quantity of vine entwining itself in bushes and branches of the smaller trees; in fact a complete network of it. The monkeys in this province are of the most gigantic size, and startled me not a little, as they occasionally made a rustle through the branches about, and stretched out their ugly, yet comical grinning faces, to say, as it were, "How do you do?" As we passed along, several times they were particularly bold, and stretched out their long arms in an endeavour to lay hold of the end of the gun, or the cap on my head. I had frequently the rifle dropt on my left hand to fire at them, when my worthy companion told me to let them alone. Certainly the huge size and daring of some of them would justly alarm any one not accustomed to such creatures; yet Jack did nothing but laugh at them and me, said it was all tricks, and that they were only curious to look at a stranger.

On we trudged, Jack leading the way, and at a good round pace he moved too: the thickness of the vegetation around began gradually to decrease, and at last, after about four miles of a tramp, we emerged out of this dull jungle into the dark forest, where it was quite free from underbrush, but no sky to be seen, as the great dimness of the foliage overhead effectually concealed it; but the beautiful shade of

yellowish green that threw its mild light on the earth below and surrounding objects made up for it. Those who may not be acquainted with a scene of the kind would on first beholding it gaze in astonishment. However, I had experience of such a situation, and only felt the return of pleasurable feeling that I enjoyed at a former period in the darkened forests of North America.

In going along we passed a great many snakes, some of considerable length, writhing sluggishly about through the grass and dead leaves. Jack said "they were no harm," so we paid no attention to them. Now and then we fell in with a patch of dense jungle, which was closely examined by us. The howling and hoarse barking of the beasts became more frequent and nearer to us, and from the time my guide told me to "keep my eyes about me," we used great caution, kept ourselves and guns in readiness for immediate action, and observed strict silence. All the directions Jack gave me were by signs.

CHAPTER V.

THE RAVINE. — A WILD HORSE PURSUED BY TIGERS. — TIGERS' ATTACK. — JACK'S CONFLICT WITH THE OTHER WOUNDED BEAST. — JACK AND I PROCEED TO AN ESTANCIA OR FARM. — HOSPITABLE RECEPTION. — A TIGER VISITS THE FARM-YARD AND IS KILLED. — FEROCITY OF THE AMERICAN TIGER. — A CURIOUS MUSICAL INSTRUMENT. — JACK'S PROFICIENCY IN PERFORMING ON IT. — PASSAGE IN A CANOE UP THE RIVER. — LUXURIANT VEGETATION. — PARROTS. — KINGFISHERS. — MUSQUITOS, ETC. — PURCHASE A CANOE. — PROCEED UP THE RIVER. — SOLITUDE OF THE SCENE. — RICHNESS OF THE FOREST. — NOISE OF WILD BEASTS. — LUXURIANT VEGETATION.

In this cautious manner we arrived at the brink of a deep ravine, at the bottom of which there was much brushwood, with here and there a pool of water. We sat down to rest ourselves, and listen for awhile to the music of the woods, which I must say was very discordant; the barks, howls, and roars of the beasts were incessant. The ravine was extensive, and there was a good deal of cleared ground in it, so that we could see up and down it a good way. We were in the act of descending half way down the bank when we heard frequent loud yelps approaching us fast: Jack now told me to drop down, keep close, and the

gun ready; he did the same, his dark expressive eyes dancing with half-concealed eagerness. We had not long to wait, for in two or three minutes a beautiful young wild black horse came tearing along the clear part of the ravine, in the direction of our concealment; he was going at his utmost speed, and closely pursued by two splendid tigers that ran much quicker, and whose bounds we could distinctly perceive were great, as at each, they rose several feet from the ground.

As the poor horse came up nearly to where we now were (for we crawled deeper into the ravine) he seemed to be nearly exhausted, and slipped down on his knees, about thirty yards from where we kneeled down ready for them. One of the tigers crouched with all the twisting motion of a huge cat, and made a spring of about twenty feet right on the back of the horse, and seized him by the neck with a fearful growl; the other animal trotted round the horse, lashing his tail about, and roaring with terrific ferocity; they were too busy now with their victim to scent us out. "Are you ready now," said Jack? "I am," said I. By agreement I covered the tiger on the horse, my guide the other; at a signal both guns went off together.

The one I had covered rolled kicking off the horse,

the other fell down and tumbled about in all directions, evidently badly wounded. "Now for the knife," said Jack; and we rushed up to where they lay. Mine was dead, but the other was still active, though unable to move any distance. I went up to him with the intention of firing my second barrel through his head, when my guide insisted upon me letting him alone, and drew his long knife. The tiger had yet great vitality, and I was much alarmed lest he might yet injure the man, and kept the gun ready for an immediate shot.

Jack went boldly up to him; the infuriated animal grinned horridly and writhed rapidly about, throwing up a good deal of dust from the dry ground. One plunge of the knife, a roar, into him again, a hideous grin and a tumble about, some blood scattered on the ground, at him again, a miss stroke of the knife, try once more, both down and nearly covered with dust. I was now determined to put an end to this dangerous conflict, if I could; but the rapid motion of both man and beast prevented me firing, lest one should receive what was intended for the other.

The tiger had now hold of either the Indian or his clothes, as both rolled together; yet the knife was busily at work. At last his arm was raised high up with the red dripping instrument, and after one more

angry plunge of it, the tiger turned on his back, his paws and whole frame quivering, and with an attempt at a ghastly grin, he fell over on his side and died. Jack then stood up, covered with the blood of the animal, and his first ejaculation was "un diablo," in English "one devil." I was anxious to ascertain if the man was hurt, and after washing himself in a pool of water near us, I was delighted to see that he escaped, with the exception of one faint bite on the shoulder, and a few tears of the paws on his arms, which he seemed to care nothing about. He was a brave man, told me he killed many of them, but this one he said died hard.

We now considered it prudent to reload our guns, as the smell of the blood about, and the dead carcases, might attract other gentry to the spot, that it would be just as well to be prepared for. My shot, after passing through the tiger, entered the horse's neck, and killed him also. Jack told me now to keep a good look-out while he skinned the animals, or, as he said, "took their jackets off." He worked with experienced activity, had in an incredibly short space of time the hides off the tigers and horse, rolled them closely up into a convenient pack, made all fast with a thong which he cut off, and finished the affair by saying "a doubloon's worth any how."

My sturdy guide now shouldered his prize, and away we trudged down this romantic ravine, in order that the bank of the river might be reached, on which there was a farm-house that we might rest in during the night. As we went along there was great yelling behind us; this was an attack of the tiger and jaguar on the dead carcases of the animals that were slain. As the sounds reached us, Jack remarked, as if speaking to the brutes, "ay, you may sing now, as you've got your supper." After another hour, as the sun was nearly set (without falling in with any other game), we reached the bank of the river and the "estancia," a farm which belonged to a man who was half Spaniard, half Indian, who kindly, and in the most hospitable manner, received and treated us.

I had the advantage now of my guide's English with me, and his Spanish with our host, as he spoke both languages tolerably well. He was none of your silent, grave men, but had an expressive countenance, about the middle size, robust and active; he might originally have possessed the silence and gravity peculiar to the Indian, but his service on boardship, together with his frequent intercourse with Europeans, made him a pleasant fellow, and a most lively, amusing companion. Our host informed us,

that the evening before our arrival a tiger broke into his inclosure and injured a bullock so much that he was obliged to kill it, and had very little doubt but the same beast would pay him another visit. He was resolved to keep watch from his house, which, being elevated, as I have stated before, at Tacames, overlooked his stock-yard, or inclosure.

We told him to let us know, during the night, if his unwelcome visitor should arrive, and that we would lend him a hand to despatch him. Jack and I got into separate hammocks, which were slung across one of the apartments, and being wearied both by excitement and fatigue, soon fell off into a sound sleep.

The inmates of the house, with the exception of the Spaniard, who kept a look-out over his stock-yard, all enjoyed undisturbed repose, until shortly before the dawn of day, when I was aroused by a rough shake from Jack, who emphatically said, in a low voice, "tiger come." I made an instant attempt to jump out of my hammock, but as I did so, it turned right over, and of course I fell out of it flat on the floor, making a considerable noise in this bamboo-cane-basket kind of a house. My companions (I may say in arms) were much annoyed by this interruption of the silence.

There was a kind of a door to the house, at which the ladder was placed for the purpose of getting up. A piece was cut out of it of about two feet square; at this our worthy host was stationed. Not far from it was an opening that served for a window. Here my guide and I stationed ourselves, with the muzzles of our guns thrust out. All being now arranged, a perfect stillness reigned within the house. It was as bright outside as a full moon and a cloudless sky could make it. There was not a breath of wind to move a tree or create a rustle amongst the leafy forest that nearly encircled this small clearing. The buz of the musquitoes, or the flapping about of a huge bat, alone disturbed the silence. I was about arriving at the conclusion that it was a false alarm, when our ears were assailed by the mournful and quick lowing of the cattle. This informed us at once that their enemy was near.

We now kept a keen watch on the boarded fence, and our fingers on the triggers of our guns. After about ten minutes' anxiety, that appeared almost an age, the bullocks that were made fast directly under the house bellowed fearfully, and with a high bound clear over the fence, the expected tiger leaped into the yard, and crouched. On turning his head towards us, two fire-balls of eyes met our view. "Fire!"

The three guns went off nearly at the same instant, and echoed away far through the silent woods. The animal jumped suddenly from the ground and fell down again on his haunches, roaring fearfully, evidently badly wounded. I had one barrel in reserve, took cool, steady aim, and fired. This finished the affair, as he rolled about for two or three minutes, tearing the earth, and died.

"Mucha gracia," said the Spaniard (meaning many thanks). "Oh, all right," says Jack to me, who, having constantly an eye to business, asked "who owned the skin." I told him any claim I had to it made it his. Our host said this beast was the only annoyance he had experienced for many a day, was as glad as twenty skins he was killed, and that it was my guide's. We reloaded our guns, lest there might be any more of the same ravenous family about, and did not descend from the house until it was broad daylight.

The animal that now lay dead before us was about the usual size of those full grown in the province of Colombia; the skin was beautifully marked. They are powerful for their size, very fierce, when pushed for food will attack the natives, and even their houses. However, the inhabitants hereabouts have

a vigilant and faithful ally in their dogs, which are a most sagacious and truly noble animal.

Whilst Jack was skinning the tiger, and our host with his family were preparing our breakfast, I was amusing myself with a musical instrument of rather novel structure, which, being in almost every house in this province, I may as well particularise to the reader. There are supporting posts at either end, with stretchers passing from one to the other. Attached to these, and from end to end, a number of cords are tightly drawn, something after the manner of the strings of a pianoforte. On those rests a number of pieces of sonorous hard wood, graduated to certain lengths, from six inches to two feet, and arranged parallel with each other. The number is about fifteen or twenty. The performer sits in this frame like a man at a loom weaving, and, with what I may correctly term two big drum-sticks, strikes the long or short pieces of wood on the frame as he wishes to bring out or vary the notes, exactly as a person would do on the dulcimer, and produces music, or rather sounds, of a very similar kind. They sing with it, and it is not a bad accompaniment to the Spanish song in use or fashion here.

Before I had quite finished my solo on this instrument, Jack entered the house, having completed the

operation of skinning, seized the drum-sticks, and rattled away at it, rolling his head and body from side to side, and giving vent to some comic Spanish song, which I could not understand, yet was highly entertained with the effect it produced on the household, as they went out of one roar of laughter into another. Altogether it was a very agreeable morning to the Spaniard and the rest of us.

As the sun was fast rising, the moisture from the dense and luxuriant vegetation was sending up a thick fog, which gradually cleared off, and afforded us every promise of a fine day. My guide was such a Mentor in our present pursuit, that I took his advice in every thing. He recommended, as the jungle on the river banks and for some distance in, was very thick, that we would keep the river for two or three leagues up, and then strike off again.

We were now on the bank of the River Tacames, about seventeen miles from its mouth, and twenty from the ship. Our object was, therefore, to hire or buy a "dug out," alias a canoe hollowed out of a single tree, the only kind in use here; our host had a snug one, but with great politeness and regret declined giving it to us, as he had to go down to Tacames to transact particular business; but, what answered us equally well, he said he would (before

going) paddle us up to the next house, one mile higher, where he knew there were spare canoes. The skins of the dead animals were left for safety in our host's house, and we embarked.

The river here was not acted upon by the tide; it was very beautiful, though not more than twenty yards wide; the rich and lofty trees were overhanging it everywhere; the branches were occasionally peculiarly attractive by kingfishers and parrots of the richest coloured plumage. The only annoyance was the mosquitoes, and they certainly were troublesome. We arrived in a short time at our first destination, and after being flatteringly introduced by our friend, succeeded in purchasing a safe canoe for four dollars, which, to the no small amusement of my guide, I disengaged from the folds of the collar of my coat, where I had them concealed. Our host of last night paddled down again, and we embarked now in perfect independence in our own canoe, which Jack no sooner found himself fairly afloat in than he made the woods ring with a loud "Hurra!" given in a very "ship-shape" manner.

We peeled off our coats and handled our paddles "with a will," and made rapid progress up this silent river. The howl of a tiger, the scream of a monkey, or our occasional laugh alone broke the solitude; the

various sounds of the beasts in the thick woods about, resembled much the distant sounds of a pack of fox-hounds searching cover. We passed many a beautiful turn in the river, and several of the strangely erected houses of the natives very romantically situated. Indeed, the passage on this river, without any thing else to think about, would be a great treat, and amply repay the time expended, to any one who would like to look at and contemplate undisturbed nature.

It was one continuous forest, with the exception of an occasional patch of cleared ground, about an acre or two in extent, about the houses; and I was informed it was quite large enough for the supply of all the fruit and vegetables required for the family, there being in this place an almost continued growth the year round—bananas, plantains, oranges, lemons, pumpkins, melons, and sweet potatoes. As to beef, venison, goat's flesh, and hogs, an abundance could be at any time procured in a few hours' hunt.

CHAPTER VI.

ARRIVE AT THE HUT OF A NEGRO. — HE ACCOMPANIES US THROUGH THE FOREST. — ASCEND A MOUNTAIN RANGE. — FINE LANDSCAPE. — FALL IN WITH GAME. — THE BLACK'S EAGERNESS. — A FEW DEER KILLED. — JACK SHOOTS A TIGER. — RETURN TO THE NEGRO'S HUT. — THE BLACK'S PATHETIC ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF. — HIS FORMER SLAVERY IN PERU. — HIS ESCAPE FROM IT WITH HIS WIFE AND CHILD. — THEIR SUFFERINGS. — THE BRUTALITY OF SLAVE MASTERS. — SMOKING AMONGST THE SPANIARDS. — JACK'S PARTIAL ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF. — A PACIFIC OCEAN TRICK. — KIDNAPPING MEN TO MAKE UP A SHIP'S CREW.

WE had paddled now a distance of about six miles. The river became gradually narrower. The tall trees on either bank leaned gracefully over to each other, the branches nearly meeting, and the great extent of foliage over head forming a complete shade on the water: it had a beautiful effect. When we could look any distance up, a complete natural tunnel of water below, and thick vegetation at either side and over head as we passed along. Fish in variety, particularly mullet, appeared to be plentiful, and with a fish

spear that formed part of our sporting gear in the canoe, we succeeded in securing two fine fellows.

We arrived at a curve in the river where there was a small pebbly beach. On this we grounded the canoe, afterwards hauling her well up. A short distance in from this a hut on a very small scale peeped through the trees. On our approaching it, the owner came out with his "Cumusta, Segniours?" meaning, "How do you do, Sirs?" He was a stout open-countenanced, good-humoured-faced negro, with a skin of a shining black. He gave us a hearty welcome, and we entered his cane crib, for house would be an incorrect term for it. He did not speak a word of English, so Jack and he had all the "palaver" to themselves in their, I believe, not very refined Spanish.

After some time, my guide informed me that he knew this chap before, that he had an intimate knowledge of the surrounding country, and that, although he had no arms but a spear and a pistol, he was anxious to accompany us into the woods. After resting ourselves for a short time, away we started, shaping our course right into the forest, which now became more open and free from underbrush. When about two miles from the river, we arrived at the base of a very high range of hills, their sides clothed with a rich

grass, and here and there a clump of tall trees. I became anxious to ascend these eminences, and gratify myself with a view of the surrounding country, and inquired if there was any chance of meeting game on the hills. The black answered in the affirmative, by saying, " Mucha," signifying much or plenty.

The ascent was gradual and not at all laborious; but the occasional exposure to the hot rays of a burning sun made us all three pant a little. We arrived at an elevation of about six hundred feet above the level of the plain below. The view repaid me for my additional exertion: it was truly magnificent, resembling a vast green sea. Wave after wave of apparently interminable foliage of varied hue. In some directions, lakes of various size, perfect calmness, and mirror-like appearance shone brightly and prominently in the landscape. As for the river, the only trace of that was a kind of lane or small gap in the woods below. We moved on along this ridge, using caution and silence as each clump of trees or brushwood was passed, closely examining it for game of any kind that might turn up. A few hours were expended in this manner.

We were thinking about descending into the even ground, when a rushing sound out of an adjoining patch of forest arrested our attention; there were a few low bushes near to the spot we stood on, and

under cover of those we crouched; the negro was all anxiety, and now and then half erected his body to peep out. Jack uttered a few testy words to him in Spanish. I asked him what he was saying. "I tell him keep him black skin under de bush." After some minutes a few brown deer rushed out of the woods, dashing along with great speed, heads erect, and antlers resting back on the neck; they were running nearly in a line with the bushes that hid us from their view, but in order to head them completely, we writhed ourselves through the grass some way.

Presently, two or three loud roars, and three tigers made their appearance, bounding in chace after them. The deer were now within a short distance of us; my guide whispered to me, "shoot at deer, me watch tiger." I fired at the advancing herd, one rolled over; the other barrel, a second dropped to his knees wounded. At this moment the foremost tiger came within the range of Jack's rifle, which cracked off with a report that echoed far, and the animal instantly dropped dead. It was a steady aim and true shot. The guns were quickly reloaded; the two remaining tigers stopped suddenly, looked wildly round, and sprang off apparently terrified, and with as much speed as they came in view.

I may here mention that those animals along this coast are very timid, and only for our cautious concealment they would not leave their cover in the woods; indeed, a man treading on dry leaves, or cracking twigs under foot will start them, and a careless person may walk far, and not get one within rifle range. Astonishment took possession of the deer also; they made a frightened halt, which we instantly took advantage of, all three ran up near to them and fired again, bringing to the earth two more. They were all huddling together in fear, and previous to a start, when the negro with great nimbleness of foot, got nearly up with them, actually wounded a fine buck with his pistol, and finished him with his spear. After they started I had a parting shot at them, but apparently without effect. The whole affair lasted only a few minutes. Both the "nigger" and Jack drew their knives, and with great glee commenced skinning the tiger. I could now see that the ball entered the fore part of his head, and escaped at the back near the spine. The skin was soon off and folded up. The black proposed to bring the deer, as they lay, to his hut, as it was not far off, and nearly down-hill travelling to it. We did not oppose him.

He procured from the wood two poles, placed

them about three feet apart, and crossed them with sticks, lashing both together with twisted wild vine. This temporary contrivance formed a perfect sledge, and on it he packed the deer; we all now laid hold of it, and after two or three hours' hearty laughing and dragging, arrived at the hut. It is unnecessary to trouble the reader with the particulars or peculiarity of our butchering or cooking on the present occasion; suffice it to say, that we enjoyed ourselves to our perfect satisfaction, and eat heartily of a piece of well-cooked venison, served up on a small shutter belonging to one of the windows of this very original house. There were also here the wife and son of our host, both kind in the extreme, expressively featured, but in colour as black as himself. We formed a pleasant and, I may say, a strange group, one white man, one brown, and one black, with his family. I was anxious to hear the particulars of their respective lives, and embraced the present opportunity for the purpose.

Through the aid of Jack's interpretation I obtained the following account of our sable host: — "He and his family, together with some of his ancestors, were slaves in Peru, all born in the city of Lima; after the death of his first owners was sold from one party to another, sometimes having kind

masters, more frequently severe. At last he was purchased by a merchant residing in the town of Payta in the same province; he had a female slave, for whom the subject of the present biography formed an attachment. The owners are generally glad to discover affairs of this kind amongst their slaves, and often accelerate the matter, knowing well that an increase, of what they brutally term 'stock,' may be the result. They were married, and the ceremony consisted in the master telling them to 'go and live together.'

"Matters went on smoothly and lovingly for some time; at last the severity of the owner displayed itself in repeatedly flogging the man; this was borne with fortitude for a long time." (At this part of the history our host exhibited a portion of his body which was scarred, and in welts from the lash. The poor woman sighed deeply, and I confess I felt much for them). "On an oppressively hot day his wife was ordered into a store with him to perform some laborious work, she was too weak and unable for the required exertion; the inhuman master tied her up to a post and beat her severely with a lash composed of twisted thongs of bullock hide" (she had also her marks of punishment to show).

"She writhed under the punishment; her son, then

a child, screaming at her feet; there was no mercy or cessation, until the arm of the master was fairly tired. The husband of this poor creature was looking on with, as he described it, 'grinding teeth.' What must have been his feelings? He then uttered an inward vow, both for revenge and an attempt at escape, if it cost him his life. This man and wife now laid their plans together; they lulled the suspicions of their owner by abject submission to all his orders for months, and perhaps he lauded the use of the lash for its apparent success in completely breaking the spirit of his slaves.

"Their plans were now matured: there were some English and American ships in the harbour; this merchant was in the habit of trading with some of them, and furnishing others with stores they required. One evening after dark the negro told his master that captain so and so wanted to speak with him particularly, and that he was at the hotel situated on the beach," (I may also add, from my own experience, this hotel at Payta is the chief one in the place, commands an extensive view of the bay and anchorage, has a wharf for its special accommodation, and was conducted in excellent style by an Englishman at the time of my sojourn in it).

"He never hesitated, or for a moment doubted the

veracity of his injured slave. He left his house, and as he was walking along the beach towards the hotel was stabbed to the heart, dragged down, and thrown into the water. The slave had previously provided a boat near at hand, which he had stolen off the beach about an hour before; his wife and child were in readiness; all being quickly embarked, he paddled silently out of the harbour, making a turn round nearly opposite the burial-ground, to avoid the shipping. Having in this manner rounded the northern head of the bay, he laid down his paddles, his wife and he taking an oar each, and pulled hard for their lives and liberty. The child and a bag of bread in the bottom of the boat.

"They had only a small jar of water with them, and consequently suffered much. However, after patient exertion, day and night, they succeeded in passing the precincts of Peru and arriving at Tacames, where they were 'free,' and kindly received. They 'squatted' on the bank of the river, cleared the ground, and erected the hut, where they seemed to enjoy each other's affection, and the freedom that human beings can feel, who escape from tyrannous slavery."

I inquired, through my interpreter, whether he felt any regret at assassinating his late master?

With gleaming eyes, and his whole frame presenting a true picture of demon-like ferocity and revenge, he answered rapidly, "No." Without acting so he would surely be retaken, as his owner, if he lived, would miss him in less than an hour; as it was, he had several hours' start, and cleared the precincts of Peru before his absence could be detected; and ended by saying, that another slave of the same owner attempted to escape some time before him, "that he was brought back, and so severely cowhided, that he died the next day."

During the black's recital, I confess I felt a thrill of horror and amazement, to reflect that a country like Peru, that fought, I may add, bled, for their freedom, should not only continue slavery, but barbarously maltreat their slaves. Out upon you, governments and provinces that pride in your Republican name, and still retain human beings in bondage! Your inconsistencies are disgusting!

The silence we had to maintain during our hunt in the forest prevented me from asking my guide many questions. The restraint being removed, I now asked Jack to tell me his history. He answered, "Oh, yesh, wait, me smoke first." While my friend is puffing away his cigar, I may as well tell you that scarcely any one smokes out of pipes along these

provinces of South America; all use cigars variously manufactured. Even in the most refined society of old Spanish families the ladies smoke a delicately made and perfumed cigar. On my first acquaintance with them, I was not a little surprised to hear the lady tell her slave to bring the cigar-case, light one herself, and present it in the most graceful manner to me. This act is always considered complimentary to the visitor, in fact a usual ceremony, the non-acceptance of which would convey a direct insult to the fair presenter.

Jack having finished his cigar, with evident enjoyment to himself, detailed to me some of the particulars of his life. Indeed, I think not all. I felt rather annoyed at his briefness and deficiency of candour. I shall not torment you with his mongrel English, but plainly state that he is a native of Upper California, or New Albion, belonging to a tribe of Indians who led a very wandering life, in fact, moved about or migrated as the seasons changed, or their fancies or trading dictated. Sometimes at the foot of the rocky mountains, at others along the sea-coast. One season on the banks of the Colombia River, at another on the Buenaventura down to Port Saint Francisco, and not unfrequently on the Calarado, which empties itself into the Gulf of California.

During those wanderings, Jack's tribe had frequent skirmishes with other Indians, and more than once a brush with United States hunters and exploring parties. He was rather silent on the subject of his part in those affairs; but, if I may judge by his natural prowess, his enemies had to contend with a crafty and daring enemy. He acknowledged having removed the scalp-tuft from the heads of some white men, but qualified the deed by saying they deserved it, as they often attempted to plunder his tribe of the fur skins they had collected, and otherwise insulted them.

About two years previous to the time of his narration to me, his tribe happened to be in the neighbourhood of Port St. Francisco, for the purpose of trading and selling, or rather bartering away, a large quantity of skins, for powder, tobacco, rum, &c. Several whale-ships lay in port at the time, and Jack, accompanied by another Indian, went on board an American ship to sell their stock of furs. The captain bought them at once, then informed his visitors that he was short-handed, and some of his men had run away a few days previously; that he would pay them well if they remained on board, as he was just going to get under weigh. The Indians at once said "No." They were then politely informed that on board they

should remain, and, to satisfy them of the seriousness of the captain, were instantly put under arrest, and down between decks, until the ship was far at sea.

The next day found them out of sight of land, and completely at the mercy of their kidnapper. They were compelled to assist at every laborious work on board, and in the boats in chace of whales. Jack's companion sank under his grief and maltreatment, died on the coast of Japan, and was buried in the deep. The ship, after an unsuccessful cruise in the North Pacific, again came in on the South American coast, and Jack was landed at Tacames, where I found him.

CHAPTER VII.

SHIP CAPTAINS AND NATIVES. — THE NEGRO PROCEEDS DOWN THE RIVER TO TACAMES WITH THE DEAD DEER. — JACK AND I EMBARK IN OUR CANOE, AND PADDLE ON UP THE STREAM. — THE RIVER. — ALLIGATORS. — ROARING OF WILD ANIMALS IN THE BUSH. — BEAUTY OF THE RIVER SCENERY. — DISEMBARK FROM OUR CANOE, AND CONCEAL IT IN A SMALL CAVE. — ENTER THE FOREST AND CONTINUE OUR HUNT. — BENIGHTED IN THE WOODS. — SLEEP UP IN A TREE OUT OF THE REACH OF WILD BEASTS. — ANNOYANCE OF THE WOOD TICK. — REACH THE MAIN ROAD BETWEEN ESMARELDAS AND THE CITY OF QUITO. — OPEN COUNTRY. — RICH FARMS, GARDENS, ETC. — ARRIVE AT THE VILLAGE OF TOLO. — KIND RECEPTION. — JACK ASSUMES CONSEQUENCE AS MY INTERPRETER. — DESCRIPTION OF TOLO AND ITS INHABITANTS. — THEIR WISH FOR ME TO BLEED THEM ALL. — EXPRESS FROM RIO VERDE. — A REVOLUTION ON A SMALL SCALE. — SOLDIERS WITHOUT PAY TURN BANDITTI. — INHABITANTS OF TOLO HIDE THEIR MONEY. — THE TOWN PUT INTO A STATE OF DEFENCE.

THE reader may think it rather strange that the captains of vessels belonging to any Christian nation would detain natives on board their ships, after the manner of those two Indians, yet such occurrences, or rather outrages, are not unfrequent at the various

inhabited islands of the Pacific, and along the western coast of the Americas, such transactions often happen. In consequence of bad treatment on board many ships, particularly American whalers, the men run away whenever opportunity offers. To supply their place, the skippers resort to inducing strangers and natives on board, and taking them off to sea with them; but they invariably land them somewhere in the Pacific before they steer for home, as this method of making up a ship's crew might not altogether be approved of. In fact, the trick is only known to those who are well acquainted with the Pacific and the transactions of ships that cruise in it.

Our sable host determined to take the dead deer down the river to Tacames and sell them. Accordingly next morning he loaded a large canoe with his prize. I commissioned him to leave one of the deer on board my ship for the captain and officers, and Jack told him to leave the tiger skin with the others at the house below where we stopped the previous night. We appointed to meet again at his house in a few days, and away he paddled down the stream, singing a lively "fandango."

Our canoe was again launched into the river, and being well rested, we urged it at a rapid rate up the river, which, occasionally from being very narrow,

would widen out and form a small lake of very picturesque appearance, fringed along the bank with the most luxurious timber and brushwood. The barking and roaring of the wild animals was incessant, though not unpleasing to our ear; it was the natural music of the undisturbed forest, and we liked it. The only disagreeable feature in the wild landscape around us, was the crawling upon and along the banks of the disgusting alligator, covered with mud out of the river: they were hideous-looking creatures to look upon, yet gave us no concern. They quickly got out of our way as we approached anywhere near them. In fact, they were quite timid, and every where in this province, though they would take advantage of a man lying asleep or in a state of inactivity, and drag him into the water, yet they seldom or never attack even a boy when he is in motion.

The trees on the margin of the water were literally alive with parrots and monkeys; kingfishers and vultures were occasionally seen perched on naked branches that here and there overhung the water. As we procceded several miles up, and were moving in a more open space where the view extended, the high mountains in the interior occasionally showed themselves, the thick brushwood began to disappear

from the banks, long grass and flags supplied its place, and the forest became again more open, with extensive plots of rich grass, high and peaked rocks of strange appearance towered over the foliage, and looked like spires, or some kind of artificial erection. The banks of the river were now either sand or gravel; the water shallow and clear; and as we passed along, the fish were jumping about gaily in the endeavour to catch the large flies and winged insects that buzzed along its surface.

A little further up, there was, on the left side of the river, a small cove or basin of smooth water, having a narrow inlet which was almost concealed from view by the overhanging branches of trees: into this we ran the canoe. When inside, the green leafy veil concealed the river from our view, and the surrounding thick bushes made it a perfect inclosure for our little vessel, which we hauled up out of the water and made fast in safety. We took our guns, ammunition, &c. with us, cut our way through the brushwood, and, after some trouble, emerged into the open forest, where we marked some trees to point out to us on our return the true position where we hid the canoe.

We trudged along quickly, and it was a recreation to do so, being so long cramped up in the canoe.

Clumps of trees and jungle were tried for game, up small hills and down, through broken ravines, round swamps, and in open natural meadows, all to no purpose. Near sunset, after being well fatigued, we fell in with a tiger busily occupied tearing at the carcase of a poor goat which he had captured. I ventured a long shot at him, which only made him limp off slightly wounded, and he escaped. However, the remains of the goat did not, to the no small satisfaction of my guide, who said we should have a meal off it.

As it was now too late to hunt any more, a fire was soon made, a few slices cut off and roasted, or rather fried, which, with some pure water from a rill that gurgled along close by, made a very savoury supper. As the landscape around began to darken by the setting of the sun, we arranged about settling ourselves for the night. On the ground it would not be safe to fall asleep, as the prowling animals might disturb our slumbers. So we found a tree with large spreading branches that thickly shot out from the huge stem, about fifteen feet from the ground. We placed some thick boughs across those, forming a temporary stage, where rest could be obtained in comparative safety. One watched while the other slept, relieving each other twice during the night;

and, although we saw no animals at sunset, the roaring of them throughout the night was incessant, I may add fearful. We were both pleased to see the sky brighten up in the east, and when the daylight was sufficient to scan objects around clearly, we gladly descended from our perch.

After stretching and shaking ourselves, so as to regain our elasticity of limb,—after walking some time I found my skin to smart, and have a prickly feel here and there. On examining it, I discovered that I was thickly inlaid with small insects, commonly called wood-ticks, buried up to the shoulders in the skin, and fast filling themselves with my blood. This was a great annoyance and a source of smarting pain. As each was pulled out, or broken in the act of doing so, a considerable smelling ensued, which troubled me for hours afterwards. I can't understand what Jack's hide was made of, but certain it was they gave me the preference. From this unpleasant experience of a lodging in the woods of this province of Columbia, I was resolved to avoid it if possible for the future by getting into a house before nightfall, and consoled myself with the reflection, that the poor fatigued traveller entering lodging-houses and hotels in large cities at home, are not unfrequently vic-

timised by the attacks of insects equally unpleasant and troublesome.

As the game now appeared to be scarce, I resolved to make up for it by seeing more of the country; so on we went, and after a few hours' walk struck out on the road or route which extended between Esmeraldas and the city of Quito. The landscape was now changed, thick forests had disappeared, and richly cultivated small farms or gardens presented themselves to our view. The first farm-house that we entered received us hospitably, and the owner of it would not take anything from me in return. Having wended our way several miles further on, we arrived at a small town, or rather village, which the inhabitants called Tolo. Here my guide was apparently well known; and having told them (not injudiciously) my wish to see the country and the nature of my profession, I found myself styled "Physico," kindly entertained, and berthed much more comfortably than I was up in the tree.

Jack assumed no small assurance in the capacity of my interpreter with the residents of this place, who were all of a brown complexion and half-castes. The town consisted of about a dozen of houses, forming a square, with a small rapid stream of water passing through it, was surrounded by large trees, which

formed an agreeable shade, and had altogether a very pleasing appearance. The orange, lemon, and other vegetable productions around filled the air with fragrance. In this remote and secluded village, where the inhabitants seldom or ever see a medical man, my unexpected visit was warmly welcomed, particularly as they were informed by my guide that I belonged to an English ship: there was scarcely any one who had pain or ache that did not consult me.

The only emblem of my profession that I carried was a lancet, and that I had to use, at their urgent request, more than once. Indeed, I believe if I consented to their demands without a consideration for the health of this community, I might, or rather would, have opened a vein in every adult resident of the place.

What seldom occurs to medical men even in the respectable towns and cities of Great Britain and Europe—perhaps I may even add "and elsewhere"—happened to me here. The patients and their friends were pressing on me doubloons in no inconsiderable number, which, from their hospitality to me, I thought I ought to refuse, and was in the act of so doing, when my very philosophic guide gave me a wink, and a look, that plainly told me to pocket all

that was offered, and I came to the conclusion that, although the medical profession was not generally a "go-a-head" one at home, yet this instance, with many others I have experienced abroad, stamped it as one of the best recommendations I could have had, and particularly so when favoured by the presence of so worthy a Mentor as Jack had proved himself.

In the surrounding country we had some excellent sport, and altogether a very pleasant time of it. After some days spent thus agreeably, I determined to leave for Tacames; and on the morning of a fine day we were proposing to start, when an express arrived bringing intelligence from Esmereldas, Rio Verde, and some other towns, that a miniature revolution had been got up by a colonel in the service of the state, whose services were not paid for by the government, and both he and a few hundred followers were endeavouring to levy per force their arrears of pay off the various towns along the coast.

It may not be out of place here to remark, that in the various provinces in South America, and particularly along the western coast, it is not an uncommon thing to get up those small revolutions, which are generally put down after some bloodshed and much plundering. They are generally organised and led on by military officers, whom the governments could

not pay. They easily find followers for mischief, and, by seizing arms and ammunition in various defenceless places, they move about plundering like a banditti, and sometimes endanger the peace of many towns of consequence by a threatened descent on them. However, as those outbreaks are of frequent occurrence, and do not vitally affect the governments of the provinces, they are seldom reported in Europe. It is only those on an extensive scale, that overturn the heads of the state and laws, that we hear of.

The unexpected arrival in this secluded village of warlike news of course had its effect. The peaceable inhabitants were evidently greatly alarmed. Chests were opened in every house, and gold and silver, in quantities that amazed me, were taken out and buried in the earth in the surrounding wood. The inhabitants had no lack of guns, swords, and pistols, all of which were now handled by the men in a manner that informed me their intention of making a determined stand against any marauding party that might invade them.

In the open spaces that afforded direct access to the town trees were felled, placed across, and heaps of brushwood piled up. Two of the largest houses were put into a state of defence, and hammocks, beds, bales of soft goods, boxes, &c. were arranged up against

the frail partitions, so that a stray ball could not penetrate. Into those they intended to put the women and children. Before night the preparations were complete in case of an attack. As the express came along, he spread the news in all directions, and many farmers who resided in the neighbourhood came in for protection, and brought with them their oxen, horses, &c., so that our enclosure became inconveniently crowded. However, we gained in numbers by their arrival. The night was very bright, and those on the look-out, who were stationed outside the enclosure, could distinguish objects some way off. A buzzing sound of conversation issued from the densely crowded house. The lowing of the strange cattle in the square, and the occasional barking of the dogs, were all that disturbed us during the night. A personage of the highest class, who had served as an officer, named Don Pechos, directed all the arrangements of defence I have mentioned.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PLUNDERERS APPROACH TOLO—THEIR WARM RECEPTION.—DON PECHOS'S ARRANGEMENTS FOR DEFENDING THE TOWN.—THE ATTACK.—GALLANT DEFENCE.—REGULAR CAVALRY IN CHACE OF THE REVOLUTIONISTS.—SOME OF THE BANDITTI SHOT, OTHERS WOUNDED AND PRISONERS.—JACK'S EYE TO BUSINESS—MAKES A GOOD THING OF THE AFFAIR.—LEAVE TOLO, AND PADDLE DOWN THE RIVER.—ARRIVE AGAIN AT THE BLACK'S HUT.—PROCEED DOWN WITH THE STREAM.—OUR WOODING PARTY.—ARRIVE AT THE SHIP.—THE TOWN OF TACAMES IN CONFUSION BY REVOLUTIONISTS.—PET MONKEYS AND PARROTS ON BOARD.—SAIL FROM TACAMES, JACK ON BOARD AS PASSENGER.—GULF OF PANAMA.—HEAVY RAINS.—A GENERAL WASHING DAY ON BOARD.—I'SL MALPELLO, OR BALD-HEAD ISLAND.—DESCRIPTION OF IT.—FISHING FOR ROCK COD.

A HORSEMAN on the following morning came through the country, and arrived with us early. He informed us there were detached parties of the revolutionists plundering the country further down, and that the military of the province were already out after them. A few hours afterwards, our

out-sentinels came quickly in, telling us there was a large party of the enemy coming up along the high road (if I may so call it). All now became bustle, and every one prepared to receive them. The women and children were placed in the two houses for safety; the men were ordered by Don Pechos to their station in parties here and there. Jack and I were left to our own discretion, kept together, and moved about from one place to another, as suited our inclinations or gratified our curiosity.

By-and-by our invaders came in full view. Some were mounted, the majority on foot as irregular infantry, all well though variously armed, and a more villanous-looking banditti could not well be imagined. They came up very irregularly and with every confidence, not expecting to meet with any obstruction to their plundering desires in this small village. However, on coming nearer and getting a glimpse of the temporary defences of the place, they quickly closed up, and arranged themselves in order to break down any obstacle that opposed them. A few now boldly advanced to clear away the brush-wood and piled timber. At those a volley of musquetry was fired, which had the effect of killing some, wounding others, and driving back the rest.

After this the enemy divided, with the intention

of storming our feeble position on two sides. Don Pechos acted with much promptness and firmness, and divided our forces to meet them. Indeed, there was not much time to deliberate, as they put their intention quickly into effect, by making a dash at us on two points. The firing from within and without was now rapid, and not a few were falling from its effects. Under cover of the smoke, some more daring than the rest made several attempts to set on fire the heaps of brushwood, and thus to come in on us. However, they were unsuccessful, and only forfeited their lives, as Don Pechos had observed an excellent precaution from an attempt of this kind, by previously throwing water from the stream in the square on the dried branches, which effectually prevented their speedy ignition.

This saved us a rush from those cutthroats. My guide's "shooting-iron" (as he termed his gun) took an active part in the conversation, spoke sharply and quickly, and was handled well, with alacrity and effect. After some sharp firing our invaders moved off, having evidently got enough of it, and for the safety of the village we felt greatly relieved. Soon after we heard the sound of a bugle, and about 100 men (cavalry) came dashing along the road in chase of the revolutionists, who were not

far off. A great many of us followed them to gain a view of the rencounter, and were not a little gratified to see several killed and the remainder prisoners. Jack stole away from us, took a part in this latter affair, succeeded in searching some of the dead, and returned with a good sized bag full of gold and silver, being, no doubt, part of the plunder they had already secured. He also became the proprietor of a case of fine long pistols, which were elaborately inlaid with silver; and what particularly consoled and gladdened us was the idea of our having got out of the scrape without a scratch.

After this the prisoners were all marched off, and the "soldados" or soldiers out of sight, the fears of the people of this small town and the surrounding country were allayed; and I have only to remark, that, during the heat of the affair, the savageness of the opponents, the blasphemous cursing, and the total disregard of human life was truly awful. The defences were now cleared away, the cattle that crowded the square were driven out, and the carcasses of those that were shot were dragged some distance off. The four men who were killed on our side were respectively deposited in a small house prior to interment; and the chief part of the population took an

active part in the rejoicings which celebrated their safety and victory.

As there were no enemies or scouting parties now in our way and the country safe, we made a start; and after a few hours' direct march reached the spot where we left our canoe, which we found safe, and after launching it, put in our guns, money, &c., gladly seating ourselves; and as Jack plunged his paddle into the water he gave a yell and chuckle of pleasure, that told at once of his successful expedition. Indeed, I felt extremely happy at being once more afloat, and on my way down to Tacames.

The stream now favoured us, and before it was quite dark we reached the negro's hut, having previously concealed our cash, according to my guide's advice. We were again kindly treated. The black having returned from Tacames two days before, he handed a note to me, which contained "thanks for the deer I sent on board, and a caution in making my way down again, as they had heard of the outbreak on shore." Our host had also disposed of his venison and skins to advantage, and in coming up the river had been wantonly fired at by some of the revolutionary party. After resting ourselves here with a good refreshing sound sleep, we continued our

course down the river; the stream ran faster as we proceeded, and we swept along gaily.

The alligators thickly studded the banks, but we heeded them not. The river now widened out, and the scene was most pleasing. At last we came near the mouth of the river, and as we swept along the bank at the last curve near the entrance, I espied close to us a few of our ship's company engaged in loading a boat with fire-wood. On seeing me they stood up, and, with all the strength of their lungs, gave three hearty cheers; and, after speaking a few words to them, they begged, if I had "a shot in the locker left," I would give it to them for refreshment. Now this I was in the habit of doing whenever they pulled me on shore from the ship, so I acceded to their request, telling them that I thought they could hardly obtain any thing here.

The tars differed from me in opinion, as there was a house near hand where they could procure a little "aqua denta." Sailors are sure to make such discoveries, if any thing of the kind is to be found. Indeed, poor fellows, I am sorry to say, it is generally, with most of them, the extent of their explorations on land, and they pay dearly for such propensities, being taken advantage of by almost every one they fall in with on shore.

I felt great enjoyment in being again on board the ship and having a refreshing change of clothing. I was informed that since I left the ship a party of plunderers had entered Tacames, the inhabitants had fled to the adjoining woods, and no lives were lost; but the invaders succeeded in taking off much value in money and goods, which the people had not time to hide, or bring with them. The wooding and watering was now completed, and after two or three days we were ready for sea. I brought my trustworthy guide down to my private cabin to settle with him for his services with me; but, to my astonishment, he refused any money I offered him. He said he was more fortunate than he had been for a long time, and picked up money enough in the skirmish at Tolo; but he begged that if the ship was to touch at California, that I would intercede with the captain in his behalf and land him there.

I did so at once, and for the present completed Jack's happiness, by telling him that the ship was after a little to call at Cape St. Lucas or St. Francisco, for a supply of beef, and that the captain would land him there. He was so grateful that he offered a tiger's skin and the silver-mounted pistols as a present to the skipper; but he only took the skin, and said, good-naturedly, he would not deprive the poor fellow of

the pistols. The canoe was a stout one, and was hoisted on board and placed on the deck for further service.

In consequence of the confusion that the marauding band of revolutionists created in Tacames and the country about it, the supplies that could be then obtained for the ship was very limited. In fact, with the exception of wood, water, two boat loads of oranges, plantain, &c., there was nothing else.

However, as sailors generally pick up something strange in every port visited, they did so here, and procured a few parrots and a number of young monkeys (indeed, I believe there was one for every man on board); that contributed much afterwards to the amusement of all, and not unfrequently occasioned rows between the men, as scarcely any one would allow his pet "Jacko" to be hurt by another. We took advantage of a fine staggering breeze, and left the anchorage at Tacames, steering under all sail to the north-west. After obtaining a good offing the wind died away and the ship was becalmed.

The sea off the Gulph of Panama was sluggish and appeared more muddy than usual. Much drift wood and weeds were floating around us. Frequently turtle were seen sunning themselves on the surface of the water, and dolphin in great numbers sur

rounded pieces of floating timber that were encrusted with barnacles by being long at sea. Of those last-mentioned we caught a good many, which added a wholesome variety to our mess. About here we experienced also heavy showers of rain occasionally; this additional supply of fresh water was always taken advantage of by the men, who washed all their soiled clothing in it.

Such a scene is very amusing. Each of the crew prepared for this general washing time, by stripping themselves, leaving nothing on but their trowsers; tubs and casks were in instant requisition; soap was in great demand, which article some possessed; others, who had not, either borrowed a piece from his messmate, or cleverly obtained it by a sleight-of-hand trick; there was a frequent hollowing out of "Who stole my soap? I'm blessed if I didn't leave it down beside me not two minutes ago!" The answer was sure to be "How do I know? Why didn't you hold it in your hand!" "My eyes, Jim, what a lot of fine lather you have raised in that tub! Don't heave the suds overboard when you're done. I'll scrub my trowsers in it." "I say, Bob, you may sign articles to a laundry when you get back to London." "Halloo, Jack, where did you make out that 'ere soap?" "Never you mind. Mum's the word!"

The entire crew were on deck, the rain falling heavily, the deck splashed over with soap and water, jokes passing round rapidly,—in fact, all laughing and merry; and when the clothes were all well rinsed off, they turned too and ended the "spree" by washing each other from head to foot with soap, water, and a wad of old flannel. The plan they generally adopt is, one to incline well forward in a curved position while the other scrubbed his back; when all was over, and the deck washed off, lest the men should get unwell from the exposure of their bodies to the rain and the splashing in the water, the skipper very considerately ordered them a glass of grog all round, which was swallowed with infinite pleasure by our worthy crew, and a few of them would precede the draught by a "Here's to another rainy day."

The ship was kept moving about when the breeze at all favoured us, and a close look-out observed for the sperm whale. In a few days we were in sight of "I'sl Malpello," as it is called in Spanish, or if you please, in English, "Bald head." When about three miles off it two boats were lowered, with a supply of hooks and lines for fishing; when we pulled close to it landing on any part was found to be a risk, as the swell and surf lashed up high against its cliffs.

It is composed of, I may say, one mound of rugged

rocks, with some stunted shrubs, and moss here and there on it, the summit apparently a rounded dome of rock perfectly bare and white looking, forming as it were a "bald head," and is so termed from its similarity in appearance. A few fur seal were observed among the rocks, but we could not go near enough to land, as the boat might be stoven by the surf. Some lizards of enormous size were seen also; as for sea-fowl they were in thousands, flying about us, and others perched on their nests, on every ledge of rock, or level spot.

In a short time we caught a great number of rock cod fish, but the sharks were so numerous that all our spare hooks were nearly broken or carried away. It was altogether a wild scene, and had something of the dismal about it: the continued and loud screaming of the sea-fowl, the darkened gloom of the cliffs over our heads, the strange moaning of the swell as it gurgled deep in the rocky fissures, the animated mass of ferocious sharks that moved about under the boats, — all helped to make the aspect gloomy, and I was glad when we pulled away again to the ship.

I shall not now detail our routine of cruizing by particularising the occasional dead calms, fresh breezes, squally weather with heavy showers of rain, or even the success or slight mishaps attending the capture,

or unsuccessful chasing of sperm whales, but merely state that after a not unfavourable cruize of two months off the bay of Panama, we moved on with variable winds in a westerly direction. The fresh water that was procured at Tacames was not good and did not keep well, and for the purpose of getting a fresh supply of purer, we steered for Cocos Island, which lies in 5° 30′ north latitude, and 86° 30′ west longitude.

CHAPTER IX.

ANCHOR AT COCOS ISLAND. — A BATTLE BETWEEN THE PET MONKEYS ON BOARD—THEIR OWNERS TAKE THEIR RESPECTIVE PARTS IN IT. — ASPECT OF THE ISLAND FROM ANCHORAGE. — PECULIARITY IN THE LANDSCAPE. — LAND ON THE ISLAND. — FIND THREE RUNAWAY SAILORS ON IT. — THEIR MISERABLE STATE. — OUR CAPTAIN CONSENTS TO TAKE THEM ON BOARD. — WATERING AND WOODING GANGS. — OUR PASSENGER, JACK, AND I PREPARE FOR AN EXCURSION THROUGH THE ISLAND. — WE ARE LANDED IN THE WESTERNMOST BAY. — DESCRIPTION OF IT. — PROCEED INLAND. — RUGGED TRAVELLING. — A TROPICAL FLOWER. — FALL IN WITH WILD GOATS — SHOOT ONE. — JACK'S OPINION OF THE ISLAND. — A DARK RAVINE.

THERE were heavy falls of rain as we neared the land; indeed we were close in, on the eastern side, before it was distinctly made out, in consequence of the denseness of the drizzling showers; the swell was heavy in towards the land, the breeze died away, and we were obliged to lower five boats, with their hardy crews, to tow the ship off into safety. During the

calm the suction was so great in on the island, that the boats were down four times in twenty hours to drag her off the ground swell. During the dark nights the outline of the island, and even small rocks and trees, were accurately defined by the continued flashes of vivid lightning, that seemed as it were to hover over the land.

At last we were relieved from all further anxiety about the ship, and the fatigue of the crew attendant on towing her clear of danger, by the arrival of a fine breeze and clear weather. Taking advantage of this (I may say) windfall, we set every sail, steered for the north-eastern point, and were soon safe at anchor in a snug bay, the beauty of which dazzled and charmed us.

Our arrival here was celebrated in rather an extraordinary and ludicrous manner. The sails were scarcely rolled up in the yards and the ship's decks all clear, than there arose a loud screaming and chattering noise from the forward part of the ship. This was caused by a regular fight between about half-a-dozen of the pet monkeys, who were with fierceness disputing the possession of a biscuit that was thrown amongst them by some mischief-maker, for the purpose of seeing a "jolly scramble." The scene was too amusing to be lost; so every one

gathered round the disputants, who appeared to be too busily engaged to remark the bystanders. I must inform you that each monkey was particularised by the name of his owner, and often, in giving orders about the ship, when the officers would call a man by his name, the monkey would instantly come, or follow his owner everywhere about the rigging. Their names were Dick, Harry, Bill, Jack, Tom, Jim, &c.

On this occasion the parties contending were nearly matched in size and strength, so it was bite, scratch, kick and chatter, each owner backing his favourite with such hints as "Go it, Dick"—"Into him, Harry"—"Pull his tail, Ben," &c. By-and-by the excitement increased; the proprietor of each pet did not think his monkey got room enough or fair-play, angry words ensued, blows followed, and in about ten minutes there were about a dozen of men fighting and "fisty-cuffing" each other round the deck.

The captain was in his cabin at this time; the uproar disturbed him, and he ran up on deck pale with rage. His sudden appearance put a stop (as if by magic) to the performance, and, as soon as his anger allowed him utterance, he asked, "What is all this about? What do you mean?" The men all slunk to the other end of the ship, tittering and

smothering a laugh. The risible muscles of the officers were so effectually strung up that they could not utter a word. I acquired command over myself sufficiently to explain the cause and nature of the row. He roared out to the men, that "he had a great mind to land every d——d monkey of them on this island, and if any occurrence of the kind happened again he would heave them all overboard." The captain and I went down into the cabin to laugh it over; the ship's company, both men and monkeys, were as good friends and as merry as ever in a few minutes after.

From the position of our anchorage the aspect of this uninhabited island was surpassingly pleasing. The vegetating powers of the earth and climate appeared to be unusually great, as there was not a spot of land in view, all being covered thickly with heavy timber, brushwood, vines, &c., even down to the water edge, where not unfrequently the richly-leafed arms or branches of tall trees stretched out, overhanging the water, which now and then rose in gentle swells underneath and breaking on the low rocks would occasionally scatter its silvery spray high up and amongst its leafy canopy.

Another peculiar feature here was the perching of the small white sea-fowl in vast numbers amongst

the branches of the trees and bushes near the shore. The contrast of the white plumage with the bright green leaves, conveyed to us appearances, at a short distance off, that closely resembled tall garden shrubs with white flowers. At the head of this small bay there is a short beach walled up behind by high earthy cliffs.

At about the centre of the beach is a large run of water coming from the hills in the interior, its course nearly concealed by the overhanging timber, and tumbling from rock to rock through a very rugged ravine, forming many noisy falls, and terminating its career among a parcel of large irregular flattened stones, from which the stream rattles over the shingly beach into the sea. Near the beach there are several instances of this fresh water leaping off high rocks down ten or fifteen feet, forming a delightful and natural shower-bath, of which we all took advantage, and daily during our stay refreshed ourselves with it.

On the right-hand side of this waterfall, the land towers up to a considerable height, forming a mountainous range up into the interior, which separates this low land from the large but less secure bay further round to the westward. On our landing here, we were unexpectedly received by three men, who

were apparently in a very miserable plight; they had scarcely any clothes on them, their hands, feet, and faces were greatly swollen by the bites of that annoying thing the musquito, of which, on this island near the water's edge, there are clouds buzzing about continually, particularly in the evenings.

One was an Irishman, the others were Americans; their story was "that they belonged to an American whaler, were tyrannically abused by the captain and officers, and on the ship calling here for wood and water, they preferred remaining on this uninhabited island, to continuing on board: there was a wooding party sent from the American ship to the shore, the chief mate or first officer had her in charge, and gave them, after landing, more abuse and even blows; now that they were on land they felt more courage, turned quickly on him, and, as they expressed it, gave him a good pummelling, alias 'served him out,' and walked into the bush." Those men were now several months on this island, well tired of their solitude, and requested to be taken off, which application was humanely acceded to by our skipper, and some time after were received on board other ships as sailors.

There was every facility here, of obtaining an extensive supply of fresh water; the fire wood, of a hard

good kind, was cut down on the top of the eminence, hurled over the precipice, and fell on the beach, where it was sawed up into convenient lengths for bringing on board. Each day after four o'clock, when the work was done, the crew amused themselves after the manner of schoolboys; some on board, with fishing lines, catching excellent salt water perch; others in the boats, making excursions round the rocks and islets, collecting limpets, of which (attached to the rocks) there are great quantities of unusual size, and grateful flavour; some on shore at the water run, and in the neighbouring woods, who, before leaving the shore in the evening, might be seen carrying huge logs of wood down to the beach to make a large bonfire, round which they would amuse themselves for some time prior to coming off.

I had been at this island twice before, but made no excursion into the interior; and, as at each visit I found the water courses, or rivers, to be constantly filled, and running with the same force, I felt desirous of ascertaining from what source they were supplied, being convinced the rains, though frequent here, would not keep up the supply of fresh water that poured on continually from the interior. For the purpose of furthering my object in examining the island, the captain agreed to accompany me in the

boat, and land me with our passenger (my Tacames guide) in the other bay further westward. I put some bread and cold boiled meat, sufficient during two or three days for us both, with our guns, powder, shot, &c., into the boat, and we shoved off.

On rounding the promontory of high land, and entering the other bay, the landscape was truly charming; it appeared to be a better place for a ship to lay in than where we were: however, on this head we soon discovered the erroneousness of our opinion, as the water was found to be shoal a long way out, and that a ship could not safely anchor in it, as occasionally the ground swell would break, and form breakers far out. At the head of this capacious bay there was an extensive sandy beach, which looked white and dazzling in the sun; there was a great area of level land inside this, extending a long way back, and covered with long flags, rank grass, some shrubs, &c.

This was bounded in the back ground, and on either side, by a complete amphitheatre of hills, clothed to their summits with trees of considerable size, shrubs, &c.; the vegetation in view was all rich, of a bright green, and presented a very beautiful appearance; inside the beach, on the right hand side as you go in to land, the small river from the

interior makes its exit towards the sea; at its foot, or mouth, there is a deep pool of fresh water, which, as it overflows, passes over the beach into the sea; in this, and a little way up the river, there was mullet, perch, &c. of some size.

After amusing ourselves in this valley for a while, I bade the captain good bye for two or three days, so Jack and I now shouldered our guns, and proceeded on the tour of exploration. We kept the banks of the river for some way, and it was a delightful walk, as there were neither inconvenient underbrush or thorny shrub to annoy us or impede our progress. Having made frequent turns through the woods on either side of the stream, the land appeared to be composed of a rich deep black mould, very free from stone, and, I should think, capable of rapidly growing any vegetable. As the river was not running strong, and scarcely more than knee-deep in some places, we crossed it occasionally, and here and there discovered the fresh tracks of hogs, and indications also of goats.

Our travel into the interior and following parallel with the bed of the river, was a gradual ascent. In some parts a small hill had to be climbed up; here, of course, the river would tumble down some feet, forming a pretty cascade. As we increased our dis-

tance inland, we found the musquitoes less troublesome. There were many richly-coloured flowers of gigantic size, with scarcely any fragrance; on pulling and holding them in my hand for a short time, they would droop and die, leaving scarcely a trace of their original richness. So much for a tropical flower; they are generally magnificent in appearance on the bush or shrub, but pluck them and they are lost.

I was better pleased when I fell in with a patch of wild mint, that retained its odour for some time. We had now arrived at the foot of some high hills, through which, in a deep ravine, the stream dashed through rocks, making a loud noise, and forming handsome cascades and rapids. My object was to get up those hills, and we could not through the river or by its rocky banks, so were obliged to hunt for some time after an accessible pass.

During this search, we fell in with a flock of goats, that, from their lankness, looked like deer in the distance. On seeing us approach, they dashed off. However, our guns were too quick for them, and we killed one, both striking the same animal to make sure of him. Here, now, we made a halt, and our fire, to cook a portion of the goat, which, after being done on the hot embers, was found to be both tender and excellent. Having rested ourselves for a

38330

while, the remainder of the goat was hung up in a tree, in case we should again return this way, and continued our tramp.

Jack seemed quite pleased with this excursion so far: said "He was getting the use of his legs again," and, upon my asking him what he thought of this island, answered, "Too much hill, but very good place." About a mile further we came to a great gap in the mountains, in the shape of a rugged stony ravine, overhung and shaded on either side with large timber; into this we plunged, and manfully made our way up through it, every step having to climb over and contend with many obstacles. Our ears were occasionally assailed with the grunting of numerous hogs in our vicinity, yet we had seen none.

In this dark and rugged pass we were overtaken by a heavy thunder-shower, that obliged us to seek cover amongst the rocks on either side of us, as the foliage afforded no protection from the dense rain that poured down on the earth. In about an hour the clouds passed off and the rain ceased, but not until it made our route particularly unpleasant, from the dripping of the trees and sloppyness of the earth and stones. However, after some additional toil, and

with wet clothes, we emerged from our gloomy and damp pass into warm sunshine and fine weather.

I had the curiosity to stand for some time and look at this end of the ravine from which we had just escaped. The lower part of it, irregular broken rocks and large stones; on either side a steep earthy bluff covered with brushwood and long grass; some tall trees growing on the top of each, leaned slantingly over, so that their luxuriant branches were completely intermingled, and the thick canopy of leaves darkened this pass or ravine. In fact, it had all the appearance of a great entrance to some huge cave.

CHAPTER X.

ARRIVE AT THE SUMMIT OF THE ISLAND.— ENCHANTING VIEW.— DISCOVER A LAKE. — THE CALMNESS OF THE SCENE. — A SOLITARY MAN JOINS US. — HIS KIND WELCOME. — A DESCRIPTION OF HIM. — GO WITH HIM TO HIS HOUSE. — ITS CONCEALED POSITION. — AN ACCOUNT OF THE INTERIOR OF IT. — THE HERMIT'S CANOE. — HIS GARDEN. — THE KING OF THE ISLAND AND JACK ENJOY THEMSELVES. — THE HERMIT'S, ALIAS THOMAS STEVENSON'S HISTORY. — HIS SHIPWRECK ON THE ISLAND, ETC. — JACK'S MIRTH. — I TAKE A CANOE EXCURSION ON THE LAKE.— SOLITUDE OF THE PLACE. — EVENING SCENE.

On turning our eyes from this on the general view before us, a landscape of great peculiarity, and I may add, of mysteriously enchanting effect, presented itself. We were now in the highest part of the island, and a moderately deep valley lay at our feet. In the centre was a lake, or sheet of calm water, of considerable size; this was fringed all round with a strip of light green grass, a small sand patch here and there resembling a miniature beach. The whole view was defined by an amphitheatre of small hills and eminences of various forms, partially covered by small timber.

We descended from our partially elevated situation nearer to the lake shore, and on a large flat stone we seated ourselves, opened our forage bag, containing the bread and biscuit, enjoyed some rest and a cheerful luncheon, in as delightful a spot as any lover of nature would desire to gaze upon. Land birds, not unlike canaries in appearance, were fluttering about the low bushes, and chirping like as many sparrows.

A light breeze had now sprang up, and this, hitherto unruffled lake, was covered with small ripples that gave it a more lively appearance. Numbers of wild ducks were here and there in groups, showing more animation as the wind acted on the water. The magnificent foliage around began to flutter, and being yet wet by the late shower, glittered in the sun's rays. Altogether it was to me, who had been so much at sea, a cheerful sight, and one of surpassing natural beauty. There were some ducks not far from our resting-place, that were temptingly near the banks, and having a wish to secure a pair for our dinner, I loaded my gun with shot and fired amongst them. My object was so far gained, that three were killed at the water's edge, and brought out with the aid of a long stick.

The echo of the report from hill to hill around for several minutes amazed me; it sounded as if one emi-

nence threw the report back on another, until it exhausted itself in a dying grumble in the distance. Waterfowl and other birds flew about screaming for a while, but settled themselves after a little quite carelessly. Now, this was a region or part of the island that I thought was heretofore unknown, and sacred from the foot of man; judge of my astonishment, when a sudden exclamation of my Indian comrade directed my attention to the other side of the lake, where a man was walking round towards us.

A short time sufficed to bring us into contact with each other; as he came along, I questioned myself much as to who he was, or why here in so unusual and solitary a region; however, my doubts were soon removed, and I felt gratified to hear, in plain English, "Friends you are welcome here, I am glad to see you; my hut is on the other side of the lake, will you come with me to it and rest yourselves?" We at once accepted this invitation, and commenced our walk round.

Our new acquaintance was a man about middle age and size, of stout and healthy aspect, manly appearance, honest open countenance, though with an apparently settled gloom on it; his present costume consisted of a red flannel shirt, flannel drawers,

mocassins and leggings of goat's skin, with the hairy side out, made to fit comfortably, and a kind of cap of the same material; his person and skin was cleanly in appearance, but the beard was long and bushy; he was neither rude nor surly in manners but, in fact, rather (putting aside his uncouth dress) prepossessing.

We were not long in reaching the vicinity of his abode, and found it concealed from view in a grove of trees, perched on a high green mound; the first look, at both it and its situation, told me that the inhabitant of it displayed his natural eccentricity in its erection. On clambering up the steep ascent to it, and getting inside, I was surprised to find it both clean and comfortably arranged.

There was a rude bedstead erected on one side, covered with leaves, and goat skins softly prepared, which made an agreeable sleeping berth; in the centre of the floor was a rustic table, three or four seats around, all in accordance with the man and the scenery that surrounded him; kettles, frying-pan, some carpenter's tools, a good gun and pistols, hung up against the wall, or more properly speaking, partition of logs, two or three bags made of goat skins, and filled, concerning which I was curious, though not pressing enough to ascertain their contents.

His cook-house was a shed erected apart from the dwelling, which our host (as I may now call him) put into instant and hospitable requisition in our behalf. He had shot a hog a short time before he was aware of our presence in his valley; steaks from this were soon in the pan; Jack plucked the feathers off the ducks I had killed in double quick time, and otherwise nimbly assisted the preparations going on, which were quickly completed, and afterwards heartily enjoyed, particularly by my comrade's almost never-to-be-satisfied appetite.

In taking a turn down by the lake shore, I discovered a canoe, in a snug cove, floating on the water, beautifully modelled and well made out of the single trunk of a large tree; it was so wide and convenient to sit in, that it was more like a boat than a canoe. There appeared to be also no lack of fish in the water, as they were leaping about in all directions, and some of them of a considerable size. A short distance from this there was a patch of ground, in extent about three hundred yards square, well laid out as a garden, and containing sweet potatoes, pumpkins, melons, &c.; this small plantation was well fenced in with strong stakes, to keep off the wild hogs and goats, that were numerous on the island.

On returning to the house, I found "the king of

the island," as I may fairly term our strange new acquaintance, and my worthy friend Jack, enjoying comfortably, and with all gravity, that very general Indian gratification, the tobacco pipe; and, although the habit of smoking is not a good one, I confess I joined them for a little time with pleasure, and afterwards finally refreshed myself with a drink of the lake water, which was certainly the purest I ever tasted.

I asked our friend his name; he told me, he had both a Spanish and an English one: the former being of no consequence either to him or us, he said his name was "Thomas Stevenson." Well, Thomas Stevenson, I must say, was no ordinary man, and had evidently received an education in his younger days; his account of himself is nearly as follows: — He was a native of the west of England, was carefully brought up by an uncle of his, his parents having both died when he was a mere child; he was by his relative made acquainted with the mercantile business, and at even an early age made sundry trips as supercargo to different parts of the world; he was tolerably successful in his pursuits, and the trusted favourite of his uncle. On his return to Liverpool, after a long trading voyage to Peru and Chili, he found his friend and guardian sinking in health, and broken in spirits, from some severe pecuniary

losses he had suffered by the failure of an extensive house with which he was some way connected.

His nephew, on his coming home, exerted himself in every way he could to rally him, but all to no purpose, as he soon sank under his weight of trouble. After his death, our hero found himself in possession of only a limited sum of money; however, with this he purchased a cargo of goods for a small vessel, which he freighted, and started round to the western coast of South America. He experienced such success, that he was enabled to buy a small schooner, at Valparaiso, for himself; he followed his trading pursuits with various success, occasionally going into the interior of the provinces of Chili, Peru, Colombia, &c.; he twice lost nearly all his property in the revolutionary transactions of those politically changing countries, and yet kept his schooner and rallied again.

Three years previous to my interview with him, in making a passage from Guayaquil round to St. Blass, in the Gulf of California, he fell in with this island; the vessel happened to be close on the land before it was discovered or seen, got on the ground swell, and, though every effort was made to tow her off, they could not save her; so the crew, consisting of four men, a boy, and three female passengers,

were landed safely on the island. Afterwards, he got every thing out of the vessel that a few minutes' time would permit, and had the mortification to see his little craft dashed amongst the rough rocks and speedily break up.

After conquering the feeling that his final loss must have created within him, he rambled over the island and found this secluded and pleasant spot, where, being tired of every thing in the busy world, he found a calm retreat, and one peculiarly pleasing to him under his reverse of fortune. "You have not told me all yet," said I. "What more do you want?" said he. "I want to know where are the people that were landed from your vessel." "The day is now advanced, we could not walk far; but if you are not pressed for time to join your ship, and will remain with me a day or two, I will bring you to where they are comfortably located, on the south side of the island, not three miles from this ——."

This last was additional news for me, and excited my curiosity much; I asked him why both he and his people preferred their seclusion to living near where ships generally anchored. He answered me, by saying, "They would be tormented by runaway sailors, who would often desert from their ships, if they were aware of any people being on shore."

"What are you laughing at?" said I, to Jack, as he appeared to be tickled by some queer fancy. "What I laugh at, plenty funny; we come ashore here to hunt goats and hogs, and find queer settlement:" which, in plainer language, meant an eccentric, though small, colony.

Thomas Stevenson, late master and owner of the late schooner "Juan," at present "King of Cocos Island," made laudable exertions in behalf of his guests, and in a short time prepared additional accommodation for sleeping. I went down, unaccompanied, to the canoe, got into it and paddled some distance out, on the now unruffled and glassy bosom of the still lake; the sun of a blood-red, and as it were, of a magnified size, was fast descending, and casting a fiery glare over the surrounding scenery. Not a breath of wind disturbed a leaf. With the exception of an occasional "quack, quack" of a wild duck, the scream of an owl, or the flapping about of a huge bat, all was still. The scene was solemnly grand and awe striking, and I could not avoid paying silent adoration to the great God who created all things, and governed all things, and gave strength to the almost crushed spirit of the isolated inhabitant of this place, so as to turn this wild region into so smiling a garden, that he was fascinated with it, and

thought not of leaving this vale, his haven of repose, for the torturing toils of the world.

I was buried in reflection for some time, night was fast advancing, the clear sky was brilliantly studding itself with twinkling stars, when I was roused from my pleasing reverie by the loud, and long echoing report of a shot from a musket. "Ho! ho!" said I, "Jack's evening gun!" A few strokes of the paddle and I touched the bank with the canoe, made it fast, and went up into the house, where I was agreeably surprised to find a lamp burning, which cast a sufficient light around, and Stevenson laughing heartily at some of Jack's witticisms. After some additional conversation, we resigned ourselves to the protection of Providence, and were soon in a deep sleep.

CHAPTER XI.

THE RISING SUN, AND GAIETY OF A MORNING SCENE IN STEVENSON'S VALLEY. — FISHING ON THE LAKE. — TOUR THROUGH THE ISLAND CONTINUED. — THE SOUTH SIDE. — ARRIVE AT A COLONY OR ENCAMPMENT OF THE CREW OF STEVENSON'S LATE VESSEL, THE JUAN. — THEIR COSTUME, HABITATIONS, GARDENS, ETC. — STEVENSON'S REASON FOR NOT RESIDING WITH HIS PEOPLE. — CONTINUE OUR EXPLORING EXCURSIONS. — ARRIVE IN SIGHT OF THE SHIP. — TAKE LEAVE OF THE ECCENTRIC STEVENSON. — SPERM WHALES IN THE OFFING. — GET UNDER WEIGH, AND SET ALL SAIL IN CHASE OF THEM. — CAPTURE OF WHALES. — A LAST LOOK AT COCOS ISLAND, AND FURTHER INFORMATION ABOUT STEVENSON.

At daylight we were all up, and I enjoyed the delight of a refreshing bath in the pure waters of the lake. As the sun ascended above the hill tops, the thin veil of fog that hovered over the water and surrounding scenery rapidly, as it were by enchantment, and displayed a landscape (though circumscribed) of great natural beauty. The rising of the sun brought with it a fresh breeze, the surface of the sheet of water was rippled, and the dense foliage of the surrounding forest fluttered in a lively manner. The land birds chirped in the bushes, and the water fowls

flew about the lake; the few goats that were ranging through the grass had not as yet taken to the woods; and even the fish leaped occasionally out of the water near where I was bathing.

This last excited my wish for some additional sport, and I went up to the house to ascertain if the "Lord of the Isle" had any fishing gear. I was pleased to find he had some lines and a fish spear. We all got into the canoe, and, after a little paddling about, succeeded in taking two fine mullet. None of us had a wish to kill more than we required, so we soon landed with our prize, which formed an agreeable addition to our breakfast. Stevenson said he would pilot us through the island, and we soon made a start over the hills in a southerly direction.

Our route lay through rough land, and greatly broken rocks; but, after descending from the high land, our walk became more agreeable. The earth was again soft, thinly timbered, and some large patches of grass. The view was now more open, and the sea in the distance. Several goats dashed past us; but, as we did not require any of them for food, we let them amuse themselves unhurt. When about three miles from our resting place of the night before, we saw near the shore smoke ascending in wreaths above the tree tops. This, our worthy guide told us, was from

the houses of his people. He said, they would no doubt be surprised, yet glad, to see strangers, as none had visited them since they had landed from the schooner.

He also informed me, that he and they not unfrequently paid a visit of two or three days to each other; but he preferred living by himself. A few strides farther brought us to the village, or rather encampment, of these people. By the time we got up to the huts, they were all out to welcome us; and, indeed, I never beheld faces more expressive of unaffected kindness than theirs. They (both men and women) were brown in complexion, and half-casters, or, in plainer terms, half Indians, half Spaniards.

Their clothing, was simply a shirt and trowsers, with caps and mocassins of goats' skins. The females had saved sufficient of their wardrobe from the vessel to last them for some time, particularly here, where the weather was so mild. Their language was, of course, Spanish, and they all appeared contented. As Jack spoke their language he was soon in rapid conversation, and made himself perfectly at home with them: indeed, it was his disposition to do so wherever he went, either through the lonely forest or the village of huts, all was the same to him.

With Stevenson I took a walk round their habita-

tions, which were arranged very prettily, each being a short distance apart from the other, tall cocoa nut trees, in great numbers, waving over and around them; the sea shore, or rocks in their front, about three or four hundred yards off. There was also near at hand a piece of ground planted with and producing every vegetable they required.

I was informed by the "governor," that the females belonged to a class in society about equal with the men, and, consequently, suited them as wives here well enough; and, although they all looked now cheerful, some of them were rough characters, often annoyed him in the schooner, and frequently since on shore here scolded and fought each other, though why, or about what, he could not say; he did not like them, therefore chose his residence in the interior.

Apart from them, I asked him if he would wish to leave the island now, as I felt certain our captain would give him a passage off. He said no: lately he turned the matter over in his mind, and had written a letter by an American whale ship to a friend at Guayaquil, and he expected before long to see the person he wrote to come to this island; he also said he had a good sum of money concealed near his hut, that he saved from the wreck of his vessel,

without the observations of those people, and, on that account when he chose to leave the island he would not let the others know anything about it. It was, in fact, he said, unnecessary, as they were determined (at least for the present) to remain where they were.

Being anxious to examine the south side of the island, the village was made our head quarters for that day and night. The scenery was everywhere beautifully varied, and a great many clumps of cocoa-nut trees here and there, many wild hogs amongst them breaking up and feeding on the fallen nuts. We also observed a few fur seal on the rocks, four of which I killed, and brought the skins with me. The musquitos were exceedingly annoying about and in the huts of the people, and prevented me, at least from sleeping comfortably that night.

Early the following morning we bade the hospitable villagers farewell, and accompanied by Stevenson, continued our tour round by the eastern side of the island, which was densely wooded, and a complete succession of small hills, one after the other, like waves of the sea; examined several caves of great curiosity, and after a fatiguing tramp in hot weather (the ground being impassable from the increasing denseness of the underbrush), we bent

our track once more into the interior, and arrived, late in the day, at our friend's lonely residence. Here again we enjoyed a good night's rest, and in the morning struck on the course of the water-run that leads from the lock to the beach in front of our anchorage.

At about half a mile from the harbour, and whilst on an eminence that overlooked it, Stevenson made a halt to take leave of us. Our ship was now in view. He cautioned me against saying, whilst the vessel remained at anchor, anything about the people being here, as some of the crew might take it into their heads to run away from the ship and annoy him. I promised to do so, and we feelingly parted. A short time now sufficed for us to make our way over the uneven land which separated us from the beach. In going along we kept in the vicinity of the water course, and it was with some difficulty, and occasionally making a circuitous turn through and around the dense underbrush, that we accomplished our passage down, and at last stood on the open beach opposite where the ship lay.

Some of our people were on shore getting off the last boat load of fire-wood, whilst others were washing their clothing, and taking shower baths under some of the miniature falls in the water run. The

captain was on shore, and I presented him with the seal skins I brought from the south side of the island; he was surprised to see them, as neither he nor any of the crew had seen any seal on the side the ship anchored at. In the evening we all went off to the vessel, the boats were hoisted up, and the decks were cleared, and the ship ready for getting under weigh, as soon as we would get a breeze.

It was late the next day before the sea in the offing was ruffled by the wind, and what created great impatience on board, was the fact of whales being seen spouting about three or four miles off. At about 3 P.M., there appeared to be a good breeze outside, though where the ship lay at anchor it was dead calm. This was what might be termed really vexatious, but when a stout crew of whalers once see their game, or hear the cry of "There he blows" (alluding to a whale's spouting), all obstacles are in the most energetic manner soon overcome.

To get out of our present becalmed position clear of the land, where the breeze swept along the water, was our object, and if we would wait for wind at our anchorage, we might delay longer than any one on board would wish, so, "up anchor ahoy" was the word. Topsails and top-gallant sails were lowered, sheeted home and hoisted up, and as the anchor

came up to the bows, was fished and catted, the boats, five in number, were ranged a-head, and by the bold united efforts of their crews, the ship began to move through the water, and finally passed the headlands which shaded us from the wind, a little further out; the sails filled, and she leaned over to the breeze. The boats, now no longer necessary, were hoisted up in their respective places.

The whaling gear was all arranged in them, and the look-outs were stationed at the mast-heads. In an hour afterwards the wind from the eastward and southward freshened up, and the ship was parting the foam from her bows in the most lively manner, when a large whale was observed to breach high out of the water, about two miles to leward of the ship, when the usual sound of "there he breaches," produced life and animation amongst the crew: the ship was kept away in the required direction, but soon again rounded-to with the mainyard aback, as we were near enough to the whales, which appeared to be many.

"Stand by the boats, men." "All ready, sir." "Lower away." Whirr, whirr, whirr, sounded the boat tackle falls as they ran through the block. The splash of the boats into the water, and the dipping of the oars, was the signal of their being off from the

ship's side. With a strong quick pull they soon came up with their game; the whales evidently either heard the noise, or saw their pursuers, as they too began to gather headway. Now then came the struggle; the sails were set in the boats to assist the rowers, and on they rushed in chace. In watching them from the ship various surmises were afloat as to what boat would first get fast.

I may mention that the most distinguishing mark the boats possessed was in their sails, in the shape of painted balls on the canvass, according to the number of the boat; for instance, larboard quarter boat, chief mate in charge, one ball; waist-boat, second mate, two balls; and so on with the rest of them. By this means we could know which boat, and what officer, was fast to a whale. Those on board, who now keenly watched the proceedings, might be heard to exclaim, "Well done, two-balls!" another, "Go a-head, four-balls!" then again, it (unheard by the captain) would become a gambling transaction; "I say, Bill, I'll bet you a shirt and trousers one-ball is first fast;" "Agreed;" others would venture only niggerheads of tobacco; but every one had some stake down.

The third mate's boat, from having three balls for its signal, being considered by every one of the

crew to bear resemblance to the sign over a pawnbroker's shop on shore, was jocularly named the "pop-shop." In this instance the three-balls shot clear a-head of the other boats; it was close on, the irons or harpoons flew from the bowman's hand, and a tremendous dashing of white water, as it is called, pronounced the boat's success. A "Hurra, three-balls!" "Well done, pop-shop!" was loudly echoed through the ship. One-ball now darted a-head of the rest and got fast to another whale; those were cow whales.

The large fish first seen was the male, and it now, with apparent uneasiness, kept moving about the fast whales, occasionally rearing his enormous flukes out of the water, and shaking them in the most threatening manner. After a good deal of cautious manœuvring, two-balls came up and darted both irons firmly into him. He lay still for an instant, and then made such commotion and dashing of water about, that for several minutes we could scarcely see the boat through the cloud of spray in which she was enveloped. The fish at last went down, and sounded deeply, and the boat appeared safe.

The crew were baling the water quickly out of her; the line was fast running out, and a signal for

a boat to come up and bend on another line, which was speedily accomplished by the free boat. The fish soon gradually came up to the surface to breathe (for a whale must do so), and the one-ball boat got up again close to him, and lanced away with great energy, which made the blood dye the foam around him. Instead of again going down, he continued on the surface, and after doing only a trifling damage to the bow of the boat, was killed.

The three-ball boat, alias "the pop-shop," had a very different game to play with the small cow whale, as it kept running along at a great rate, kicking and plunging in a furious manner; another boat pulled after them to assist in killing it, and it was not until after two hours' hard toil that the nearly exhausted crews of the boats succeeded in putting an end to the contest, by a mere chance death dart of the lance. As it was, one of the boats was so badly stoven as to fill with water, and the crew to be picked up afterwards.

After some additional trouble, the whales were hauled alongside and secured for the night, and the ship laying too at sundown, the highest part of Cocos Island bearing south, distant fifteen miles. The night was pitch dark, the lightning quivered about incessantly, and fairly illumined the ship

during the first watch, and, towards morning, the rain descended in torrents, drenching every one who was on deck, even for a few minutes; however, as they were successful, they cared little about a wetting, the weather being withal warm.

Daylight appeared, and with it the rising sun, which soon put to flight the dark clouds that obscured the sky from us. The whole day was necessary for the process of cutting-in the blubber off the dead whales. The number of sharks attracted by the bloody water around the ship was truly amazing; there were the blue, the brown, and the shovel-headed sharks sailing about, and frequently darting and tearing at the flesh of the fish; it required two or three men with long whale spades chopping constantly at them to keep them out of the way, particularly when the men went down on the body of the fish to insert the blubber-hook.

At dusk all blubber was in, and the carcases let go to the bottom, accompanied by hundreds of sharks. All day we were in sight of the island, and I could not avoid taking a frequent look through the telescope at it, and thinking of Stevenson and his people who were on it. Before closing these remarks on Cocos Island, I may as well mention, that about one year after our visit to it, an evil spirit got

possession of this small community, that had really nothing to trouble them. A fight about some trivial matter ensued: Spaniard like, they used deadly weapons, and two of the men were killed; the remainder, including the females, were taken off by a whaler, and landed on the coast at the town of St. Blass.

Stevenson, then being left alone, and not seeing any one for a few months, became completely tired of his solitary residence, and, not hearing from his friend, took advantage of an American vessel that touched at the island for water, left it; was landed at Payta in Peru. I understand that he succeeded, beyond his expectations, in mercantile pursuits, and is settled permanently in the city of Lima.

CHAPTER XII.

STEER NORTHERLY. — CRUISE FOR WHALES. — THE GULF OF CALIFORNIA. — ANCHOR AT BAY ST. LUCAS. — DON FISHERA, ALIAS MR. FISHER. — HOW HE BECAME OWNER OF THE ESTANCIA OF ST. LUCAS. — COSTUME OF THE PEOPLE. — THE VILLAGE. — EXTENSIVE BUTCHERING ESTABLISHMENT. — VULTURES, CROWS, HOGS, ETC. — THEIR USEFULNESS. — OBTAIN AN INDIAN GUIDE. — START OFF THROUGH THE PLAIN WITH JACK AND THE GUIDE. — THE JUNGLE. — HUNTING THE DEER AND PEUMA. — RETURN TO THE VILLAGE, AND HIRE HORSES. — CALIFORNIAN SADDLES, AND WOODEN STIRRUPS. — OFF AGAIN FOR THE INTERIOR. — THE PEUMA, SKUNK, PIGEONS, SQUIRRELS, RATTLESNAKES, ETC. — ASCEND THE HILLY RANGE. — THE BERENDOS. — FALL IN WITH A BULLOCK ATTACKED BY WOLVES.

AFTER losing sight of Cocos Island, the ship was steered to the northward, and a strict look-out for whales observed. The winds were sometimes light and variable, at others squally with rain. After a month's unsuccessful cruise we entered the Gulf of California, or, as it is sometimes termed, the vermilion sea. It was now the season during which sperm whales are known to frequent this part of the sea,

and the men on the look-out at the mast-heads were vigilantly watchful.

In two or three days after sighting the southern extremity of Lower California, we fell in with a large shoal of whales, going fast up the Gulf: instant chase was given under all sail; boats were lowered, and succeeded in getting fast to three of them; but the old adage of "many a slip between the cup and the lip" was here exemplified: from some cause or other the whales were greatly excited, and after the harpoons had entered them, they tore about with great fury, knocked two of the boats to pieces; the third boats' harpoon drew from the fish, so that the entry (after six hours' great whaling toil) was arithmetically put down in the log book as "0," in another, humorously and classically, "nil."

However the weather was beautiful, and we enjoyed a fine steady breeze, in consequence of which the ship was obedient to her helm, and under perfect command, a matter of no small consideration in cruizing near land. When close in shore, on the south point of California, our considerate captain thought we might as well have something fresh to eat for all hands, so we ran into the Bay St. Lucas, and dropped anchor in twenty fathoms of water,

close to the land, on the eastern side, and not far from a few houses that formed the settlement here.

The surf was unpleasantly high round this bay, and the management of the boat required additional caution to avoid a good sprinkling of spray. This place is well known, and frequently visited by the English and American whale ships cruizing about here, from the facility of procuring a good and cheap supply of fresh or jerked meat; amongst them it has the jocose appellation of the "butcher's shop." On landing we were welcomed by the strange-looking inhabitants, with Mr. Fisher, or, as they sometimes style him, "Don Fishera," at their head.

The trading, or dollar-hunting propensity, of the inhabitants of the United States is shown strongly in this instance; Fisher, a native of New England, U. States, happened to stray round Cape Horn, and after visiting many places, he arrived at our present anchorage: he soon found out that something could be made out of the place, as many vessels touched at it. Now the owner of the extensive place on which this small settlement existed was a Spaniard, who made a welcome for Fisher: after an examination of the premises, the extent of the estancia, or farm, the herds of cattle on it, its convenient situation as a place of call for shipping, &c., he "calculated it

would do," if it were his own, or he had the management of it.

To accomplish this desirable aim, he made love to the old man's daughter, wooed and won her, and, from what I heard, behaved kindly to her afterwards; the death of the old man put Fisher at once into possession of all, wife, farm, and herds, and he is now actual owner of a fine grazing plain of about forty miles long, and from twelve to fifteen miles wide. I must here say he is a good, kind, and hospitable man, deserving his gains. The remainder of the people forming this settlement, are, Creoles, Spaniards, Indians, &c., numbering, in all, about twenty: they appeared to be a quiet, kind, people; their costume generally consisted of a straw hat, shirt, knee breeches, shoes and leggings of bullock's hide, with a coarse rug for a cloak or short mantle.

We were regaled here plentifully with beefsteaks: there was neither bread nor potatoes at the time of our visit, so we brought some on shore for our own use, and a small quantity for a present to our friends: they appeared all to be living solely on meat and cheese, and looked stout and hardy. The few houses, or rather huts, here were built of a material very common along the coast, unburnt bricks, or, as the Spaniards call them, "adobes;" the roofing is formed

of rough poles, thatched over with coarse grass, flags, or anything else that might answer the purpose. A very prominent feature in this, as it were, dried up and parched-looking landscape, is the great number of vultures and crows, that hop about every where, and perch themselves on every house-top, and branches of trees around the village. The extensive butchering of oxen, at this establishment, naturally attracts them to it, and the inhabitants appreciate their visits, as they clear off any cast-out dead animal matter that might otherwise annoy the settlement by its decomposition so near them.

There were also numerous hogs roaming unrestrained in the neighbouring brushwood, devouring, and, I was informed, fattening on the snakes of various kinds, which I observed to be very numerous. The ship's rigging was considered to be rather slack, and required to be set up, which work could not be accomplished in less than a few days, so I remained on shore during the time, and enjoyed some excellent and exciting sport on this extensive plain, and among the distant hills that defined it, hunting the peuma, or American lion, deer, hares, &c., and the only unpleasantness I experienced during these excursions was for the want of water.

There was no river, or even a pool of fresh water,

anywhere to be found; however, the "prickly plum," (in abundance) as large as a good sized apple, proved an excellent substitute, and was occasionally very refreshing. I bribed one of the Indians to act as guide for me during my stay on shore; he could not speak English, but his indifferent Spanish served us equally well, as our passenger Jack accompanied me everywhere about, so they understood each other perfectly.

The second day of our remaining here, by great exertion, I had the good fortune to kill three deer, and a peuma about the size of a large Newfoundland dog, and had them sent on board our ship as trophies of our success; the next day I hired horses from Fisher; the saddles were heavy cumbrous things, and I found a great difficulty in keeping my feet in the stirrups, which were simply a piece of carved wood, with a hole cut into it, to stick the foot in: however, after two or three hours' practice, I felt more at ease in them, and soon discovered that this, to me, awkward stirrup, was a very convenient protection from the dense jungle and thorny bushes we passed through, and made ample amends for the "John Gilpin" figure I cut when we first set out.

As we passed along, I saw a few skunk and a great many squirrels; pigeons were also very nume-

rous, and the occasional roar of the peuma, which timidly kept out of the range of our guns. Having crossed the plain, and arrived at the foot of the hills, we encamped, and refreshed ourselves with some fried venison, and quenched our thirst with the prickly plum. Towards the base of the hills, I observed many rattlesnakes of about the usual size, which made me at least cautious in walking through the grass, or flag patches.

I was anxious to ascend the high ground, and our guide, after going along some distance, brought us to a kind of pass, or steep, rugged, and jungly ravine, through which we gradually ascended to the high ground. We could see, standing here and there, on the high rocks, and along the margin of the precipices, many wild goats, one kind of which particularly attracted my observation; they had immense horns, generally sloping backwards; there appeared to be a restless watchfulness about them, constantly on the alert; when startled, ran with great speed, carrying the head low, and made great leaps or bounds from rock to rock; this peculiar specimen of the goat kind our guide termed "berendos," and are known, all through California, by the same name.

Some distance further on, we fell in with a poor stray bullock, evidently worn out from fatigue,

sitting on its haunches, bellowing most mournfully; six or eight large wolves were barking round, and about commencing their attack, but on our closing up to it, they scampered off into an adjoining jungle; as the poor animal was near dying, our guide mercifully killed it, making it insensible to the attacks of its devouring enemy, by a plunge of his knife into the spine of the neck. Late in the afternoon, we had cleared this pass, and descended some distance on the other side of the hilly range, into a short valley, where we found the solitary hut of an Indian family, who made us welcome.

CHAPTER XIII.

ENCAMP IN AN INDIAN WIGWAM. — CALIFORNIAN INDIANS, VARIETY OF TRIBES, AND LANGUAGES. — MORNING HUNT. — CONTINUE OUR ROUTE NORTHERLY. — A RUGGED COUNTRY. — NIGHT ENCAMPMENT. — SCARCITY OF WATER. — RETURN BY ANOTHER ROUTE. — HUNT THROUGH THE COUNTRY. — ARRIVE AT ST. LUCAS. — INDICATIONS OF ROUGH WEATHER. — THE SHIP GETS UNDER WEIGH. — A STORM. — ITS FURY. THE SAILOR IN A STORM, AND A CALM. — ENTER THE CALIFORNIAN GULF AGAIN. — THE COAST ON EITHER SIDE. — TURTLE. — CRUISING IN THE GULF. — CRUISE ON THE COAST OF UPPER AND LOWER CALIFORNIA. — ST. DIEGO. — LAND JACK AT MONTEROY; HE GOES IN A BOAT UP THE BUENAVENTURA RIVER.

We had now been over more than thirty miles of ground, part of which was tedious travelling, from the thick forest and jungle that partly covered it. The weather was excessively warm, and the horses we rode required some rest and refreshment, so we encamped here for the night. There was not much grass about for the horses; however, a substitute they appeared to relish much was found in the leaves of the mesquito tree, which were growing in abundance close to us.

After well feeding our horses, they were fastened close to the front of the hut. This was a precaution used by our guide, lest they might get loose and stray away from us, or be exposed to a sudden attack from the peuma, which we heard occasionally roaring in the forest as we rode along. We spent rather a silent evening and night, as the Indian whose hospitality we took advantage of had scarcely a word of Spanish, and the language of his tribe was unknown to our guide, or Jack, who was with me.

I may here mention that there are many tribes in both Upper and Lower California, each having a distinct language. The Monquis, Calamies, Perricues, &c., all have different languages, each scarcely understanding the other. This great variety has been the cause, I dare say, of the very expressive manner in which they give their various signs, and by those we perfectly understood our host's meaning. He was one of the Monquis tribe, a middle-sized man, robustly made, and had a wild, daring look, yet a kind one, that I felt disposed to place some confidence in, though Jack told me emphatically and, I may add, nautically, that hereabouts they were all "bloody rogues, and we might as well keep one eye open."

Our host was not alone, he had his squaw with him, also two fine athletic boys, who watched with

great curiosity the movements of their strange guests. In the morning, before the sun rose high or the heat became great, Jack and I had a couple of hours' sport through the woods, and succeeded in bringing to the hut two deer and a large hare, which were particularly acceptable to the Indian family, as their hunting gear were not just then in very efficient order.

During the entire of the day we rode on in a northerly direction, over a very rough and rocky country. The horses showed great sagacity as they made their way, uncontroled by us, up steep ascents and rugged declivities that were any thing but pleasant to look at or encounter. The whole face of the country appeared to be hill and ravine. In the bed of those valleys (if I can so call them) there is much good earth, the vegetation very abundant, although, at the period of my present visit, they had a very parched appearance. According to my observation, the rains cannot be frequent here, as the country has a peculiarly arid aspect.

At night, no house or hut being near, we chose the most eligible spot to encamp, and made arrangements for the night. The horses were our first care, next plenty of wood for a fire to cook our venison steaks and keep off wild animals, as a nocturnal visit from any of those gentry might seriously disturb our

slumbers. The sun descended with a red burning glare, the mosquitoes buzzed, and the bats, in great numbers, flew about. As we were now resting in a wild spot, it was necessary for one to keep watch while the others slept; and whoever was on guard kept up the blaze of the fire by heaping on more wood, as neither wolf nor peuma would then come near us.

Our encampment here greatly refreshed us and the animals we had ridden, by having close to it a spring of very pure water. It was a very agreeable discovery to us. Those who have journeyed or hunted through a hot country, scantily supplied with water, can alone appreciate such a luxury. In the morning I deemed it prudent to shape our course towards St. Lucas, where we arrived by a circuitous route, without meeting with any but the ordinary incidents of deer-stalking, &c. In two days after, having returned to the settlement, I discharged both the horses and the guide satisfactorily to them. The surf breaking round the bay was unusually high, the air felt cooler, and there were indications of approaching rough weather, though this was not the hurricane time of the year here. The captain was on shore, and told me he would get the ship out to sea at once, as the anchorage we lay at was much exposed and not safe.

Jack preferred the chance of being landed on some of the ports higher up in California, nearer his own people, than remaining here now, as he did not like it. So we all went on board again, and in two hours after the ship was running along at a rapid rate, under snug sail, to the southward and westward, with the wind easterly.

At sunset we had made a safe offing, and the land was dimly visible. The wind increased, before midnight, to a gale, and the ship's canvas was reduced to close-reefed topsails. The moon was at the full; but frequently and for some time its light was obscured by the dense black clouds that swept swiftly past in rapid succession, as it were one chasing and vainly endeavouring to overtake the other. When the moon became occasionally visible, its clear, pale, bright light would cast a ghastly shade on the decks of the vessel.

About two hours after midnight, the fury of the wind increased to a perfect hurricane. The ship was laid-to under a storm-trysail. The swell was not deep, as the wind was blowing from the southward and eastward and off the land; but the sea raged, boiled, and fizzed around us. The ship was leaned and kept almost on her beam ends by the great pressure of the wind, which created an awful and terrific

howling through the rigging of the vessel, giving the fearful impression of our being beset and attacked by the fury of thousands of wild beasts, whilst the constant hissing of the sea-drift sounded not unlike the approach of myriads of serpents.

The dark clouds which were driven along by the hurricane would, as it were, crack and open with vivid red lightning. If thunder followed, we could not hear it, from the deafening roar which saluted our ears. Several orders were bellowed out from the speaking trumpet, but in vain, as no distinct sound or word could be heard. All was perfect and true pantomime or dumb show performed under peculiar and necessitous circumstances. At one time the ship hung over so deep and long, that the axes were got in readiness to cut away the masts if necessary to right the vessel.

At last the storm gradually abated, the black clouds burst over us, torrents of rain descended from them, the now rising swell of the sea splashed up lazily against the ship's sides, the last dark cloud passed slowly away; daylight rapidly appeared, gladdening every one, and as the sun rose from the horizon in blazing majesty, every thinking man in the ship felt convinced that the outstretched arm of

the all-protecting Creator alone saved us, and hushed the roaring waters into stillness.

As soon as good daylight afforded us an opportunity of examining the ship, we ascertained the damage to be not so great as might be expected after so furious a blast. However, the foretop gallant-mast was broken short off with the cross-trees, most of the lining of the bulwarks, and two boats on the lee side were torn completely away. One man had his ribs broken, and several had received severe contusions, which they seemed to care little about. The pumps were sounded, and we found that the ship had not leaked any during the hurricane, which surprised us all, as she lay most of the night half buried in the sea and foam.

It is not an uninteresting subject to contemplate the true character of a sailor, under various circumstances. During the very climax of a storm that endangers all: you may observe him standing on the deck holding by a rope to steady himself, and watching, in the grim calmness of despair, every surge, or every plunge the ship makes into the yawning wave, thinking she may never right herself again. After the reprieve comes, and the fury of the gale has past, you may see him boyishly and ludicrously merry, bandying jests about, and often damning and

cursing, as usual, with thoughtlessness, and, I am sorry to add, seldom the grateful thankfulness that ought to be offered up to their great Preserver. The change in the mind or ideas of a sailor is as rapid as the wind, which we may fairly say produces those transitions that they by habit are heirs to. However, I have seen many fine manly fellows exert themselves in their duty fearlessly, and, with feelings of pleasure, have heard a muttering of prayers and thanksgiving.

After the gale, for some days, the weather was fine and clear, the wind light and variable. As soon as the rigging, which had been slackened up by the heavy straining of the ship, was "set up," or, in a less nautical phrase, tightened up, we again entered the Californian Gulf in search of whales, and were moderately successful. In navigating this arm of the sea, we made a tacking or angular course of it, at one time close to the Mexican side, again over to the Californian. The coast on either hand of us appeared all to be high, bold, and rocky. This gulf is upwards of six hundred miles long, and of various breadth. At some parts it exceeds one hundred and thirty miles across, at others not more than forty or fifty.

During our cruise in it we caught several fine turtle that were floating on the water. There were

several small vessels bound up and down trading along the coast, some to and from the settlements, or missions, as they are called, on the Calorado river, which falls into the northenmost end of the gulf, others with cargoes of salt from the Island del Carmen, obtained from a salt lake which is in it. Our cruise extended northerly as far as latitude 30°. In returning southerly down the gulf, we experienced some smart squalls off the Island of Tiburon, passed also close to the Islands of St. Jose, Catalina, &c., and so mode our way again out of this, I may say, inland sea into the broad ocean once more. There was one English and three American whalers cruising off the entrance of the gulf.

The ship now fairly rounded the lower extremity of California, and we stood off and on the coast, moving in a somewhat daily northern course. Here another six or eight weeks were expended in an unsuccessful, unexciting, and monotonous cruise. Several times, when close in, we landed in the boats, at the various settlements, for a few hours, but without any occurrence worth mentioning. At St. Diego, one of the most southern missions in Upper California, there were some vessels taking in large quantities of salted hides and tallow to bring to England and other parts of Europe.

At Monteroy we landed our passenger Jack, whose first acquaintance I made at Tacames, who acted as my guide, adviser in some sporting matters, and real friend. Though Indian, as he was, I liked him much. I found him very sincere and trustworthy. He refused sternly any offer of money I made to him, but accepted a present of a trifling kind from me as a token of friendship. He immediately took a passage offered to him in a boat that was going up the Monteroy or Buenaventura river, and I saw him waving his cap to me as the boat pulled away on its course. The Bay of Monteroy is a fine one, and the country seemed all round pleasant to look upon; but, from our short stay, of only a few hours, I had no time to examine it.

CHAPTER XIV.

CRUISE AGAIN FOR WHALES. — MY SLEEPING ON DECK AT NIGHT, ITS RESULTS. — RHEUMATISM. — THE CAPTAIN'S JOCOSE REMARKS ON IT. — RUN INTO THE BAY OF ST. FRANCISCO. — ANCHOR OFF YERBA BUENA. — I GO ON SHORE, AND TAKE UP QUARTERS WITH THE PADRE OF THE MISSION. — THE SHIP STRATFORD READY FOR SEA. — CONSULTATION WITH THE CAPTAIN. — HIS KINDNESS. — RESOLVE TO REMAIN ON SHORE FOR A WHILE. — KINDNESS OF THE PADRE. — IMPROVEMENT IN HEALTH. — TRY THE TEMESCAL OR INDIAN HOT-AIR BATH. — A DESCRIPTION OF IT. — ITS GENERAL USE. — INDIAN METHOD OF USING IT. — I AM NEARLY WELL AGAIN. — THE PADRE'S GOOD HUMOUR.

THEN we got on board and stood off the land, still searching for sperm whales for another fortnight, but without success: there was not even the spout or breach of a whale any where to be seen. For several months prior to this, while at sea and in fine warm weather, I made a habit of sleeping at night on deck, generally in one of the boats. This course I thoughtlessly pursued, as I found I could repose more agreeably in the cool air on deck than in my state-room off the cabin, which was sometimes unbearably hot.

The captain frequently did so too, and we imagined no harm could accrue from it. However, I now found the contrary to be the case, and to be exemplified in me by a severe attack of rheumatism, a thing which I had never felt before.

The pain was most torturing. I tried every means to better myself; even warm baths, a thing to be obtained only by great inconvenience on board ship, was in the kindest manner got ready for me and tried, but all to no purpose. I could now scarcely move from my bed, and every motion of the ship gave me excruciating pain. However, I was greatly cheered by the lively encouragement I received from my friend the captain, when he would say, "Come, cheer up, doctor; you'll be all right before we double Cape Horn again." At another time it would be, "I never yet knew a man to go to 'Davy Jones's locker' by rheumatism." Again it would be, "Doctor, I'll run you a race round the deck for a straw hat, or, if you're fairly hove down, I'll get the carpenter to make crutches for you."

Well, such jocose talk did cheer me much, and caused me to make light of it, but did not cure me. There was one thing that afforded me great pleasure, and that was the captain's intention of running into the bay of St. Francisco, for the purpose of procur-

ing a supply of fresh meat and bullocks, prior to making a fair start for the westward. During our laying at anchor I knew the motion of the ship would cease, and I might get ease, or I would derive benefit from my usual custom of residing on shore until the ship was ready for sea.

After three or four days' more thrashing along in rough weather, we sailed in between the two high bluffs into the great bay of St. Francisco, and came to an anchor off the town of "Yerba buena," or, in plain English, "Good Grass;" and indeed it deserves the name, for the undulating ground in the rear of it is covered with a luxuriant herbage that affords rich pasturage for the domesticated animals.

I remained (after the ship anchored) four days more in my cabin, receiving every kindness from my friend the captain, but as there was no wind, or, I may say, a breath of pure air circulating below in the vessel, the heat of it put me into a perfect fever, and I was compelled at last to go on shore. I took advantage of a kind invitation from the priest, or, as they are called there, "Padre," who presided over the mission, and soon enjoyed the benefit I derived from the free circulation of pure air through the comfortable apartment I occupied.

The ship had obtained her supply of bullocks, &c.,

and was ready for sea. The captain and I held a long consultation as to my risking going on board again, in the crippled state I was in. He said he was most anxious to have me with him, if it was for nothing else than companion sake, at the same time telling me, in the most friendly manner, that as he intended now to go and cruise for whales far to the westward for some months, the long knocking about at sea would not serve me, and as he did not wish me to return to England on crutches, he candidly advised me to remain where I was, until perfectly recovered.

Captain Lock prided himself on his surgical and medical skill, in dressing wounds, setting fractured limbs, reducing dislocations, or administering medicine; so when I expressed my uneasiness at my absence from the ship, he said to me, "Never you mind that; you know, doctor, I'm not a bad hand at physicking the crew when they want it!" Matters being finally arranged with my friendly captain, he brought from the ship what things I desired him, he taking charge of the rest; and I must here anticipate matters, by saying that Captain Lock not only took care of my chest and collections on board, but he locked my state-room door, and put his own seal upon it.

The last visit the captain paid me, he entered my apartment bearing a gun in each hand, my rifle and smooth-bore fowling-piece. "I say, doctor, you forgot to enter these tools in the list you gave me; however, I brought them off, knowing well, when you'd got better, you wouldn't be the man you used to be if you didn't knock music out of them through the woods about here." He here ordered one of the crew, who carried a bag, and was standing with it outside, to bring it in, and continued, "guns are no use without ammunition for them, so I searched your room, and all I could find I bundled into this bag, and lest you'd run short, I have added a few pounds of lead, and a couple of canisters of fine powder."

He turned out the contents of the bag on the floor before me, and displayed a supply of lead, powder, and shot that certainly would have served half a dozen of active hunters for a whole year. He had also other little presents of his own in the same bag for me. I thanked him for his kindness to me, and his thoughtfulness of my wishes and wants. He took a few turns up and down the floor, sat down beside me, and explained the particulars of his intended cruise,—that he would fit out for home at

Tahiti, but that many months must elapse before he would arrive there.

"And now, doctor, as the breeze has freshened up in the bay, I must go on board and get up the mud-hook (anchor). I have only one request to make of you, and that is, if you possibly can be at Tahiti to meet me, and we'll enjoy the passage home together; but if I miss you there, I'll bring your traps safely home for you." The warm manner in which he shook me by the hands, and the recollection of his kindness, prevented me from again thanking him. He suddenly jumped up from beside me, put on his hat, and, as he was retiring from the apartment, he said, "Remember, Tahiti, in the month of November." "I will," said I; and off he started down to his boat.

The pure air I breathed, the quiet of my apartment, together with the hospitality, kindness, and good humour of the excellent Padre, soon made a change in me; but as I felt still considerable pain, I was strongly recommended to try the hot-air bath, greatly in use here, both by Indians and foreign residents; they term it "Temescal." Its construction is peculiar, and deserves notice. A kind of wicker work is formed in the shape of a large circular sentry-box, with an oval head, and a doorway to enter it. This

contrivance is plastered all over thickly with well wrought tough clay, which makes it air tight. This strange erection will last for years, only give it a periodical plastering.

When this temescal, or hot-air bath, is about to be used, a large wood fire is heaped up close to the door, and as soon as the fire has emitted nearly all its smoke, and nothing remains but a large body of burning embers, you enter it, and either sit down, or stand up as you please. From the heated air and closeness inside the most copious perspiration ensues, which being kept up as long as possible for a man to bear this, as it were, oven, is considered by the Indians, and indeed many enlightened residents in California, to be a certain cure for at least rheumatism.

It is also used as a refresher after great fatigue, by the Indians, but in these instances their plan is different from that pursued by foreigners; they will go into the Temescal, remain longer, and bear more heat than any white man could, and after coming out, fairly dripping with perspiration, will rush down to the river, swim about for a few minutes, come in, and put on their clothing again; this sudden emersion, of the heated body in the cold stream, few white men could bear with impunity; but the

Indians are accustomed to it from boyhood, and the application of the Temescal, in their own way, seems to have a very refreshing effect upon them.

I have seen Indians, after a long journey, or a harassing two or three days' hunting, enter the square of the mission, staggering from fatigue, the first thing he asked a brother to do, was to light a fire, and after using this hot-air bath in the manner I have described Indians do, he would not only be refreshed by its use, but in all probability engaged in a fandango, or one of their own wild dances that evening: in the square of all the missions, there are several of these Temescals, and the peculiarity of their shape, is a remarkable object in the view.

Well, I did give the hot-air bath a trial, and I found so much benefit from its application, that I continued its use for several days, until I was perfectly free from pain, and could run and jump about in gallant style. Feeling myself so well, one morning, I turned to cleansing my guns, and was in the act of briskly scouring out my rifle, when the good Padre came stealthily in on me, and after a hearty laugh, and eyeing me for a moment, he exclaimed ironically, "Mucha infirma, Signen Docteur!" (you're very sick now, Sir Doctor). The comical look he gave me caused me to laugh outright at him:

he came over, took me warmly by the hand, and said he was delighted to see me so well. "Gracilis Padre," said I, meaning "thanks, Father." The Padre was an excellent classical scholar, so my knowledge of the Latin, aiding a limited one of the Spanish language, enabled us to understand each other perfectly.

CHAPTER XV.

THE PADRE AND I VISIT THE MISSIONS ROUND THE BAY OF ST. FRANCISCO. — GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THEM. — THE GREAT NUMBER OF INDIANS, AND VAST HERDS OF CATTLE ATTACHED TO THEM. — TRADE BETWEEN CALIFORNIA AND THE SANDWICH ISLANDS. — EARLY ESTABLISHMENT OF THE MISSIONS. — DIFFICULTIES ENCOUNTERED. — HOSTILITY OF THE INDIANS. — A BOLD ACT OF A PADRE. — CESSATION OF HOSTILITIES, AND FINAL ESTABLISHMENT OF THE MISSIONS. — GANGS OF RUNAWAY SAILORS, MARINES, AND OUTCAST INDIANS TURN ROBBERS. — THEIR LEADERS. — SMALL PARTIES OF MARAUDERS. — THEIR ATTACK ON TRAVELLERS AND HUNTERS. — THE LASSO; AN ACCOUNT OF IT AND ITS USE. — A METHOD OF AVOIDING THE LASSO.

I WAS soon quite well, and enjoyed the agreeable conversation of the Padre extremely; he proposed a visit round the different missions that are situated about this bay, as he had not seen any of his brethren for some time; I was pleased with his intentions, and after a few preliminary preparations, we started off and visited the missions, making a few days' stay at each, enjoying the lively, humane, and agreeable

conversation of the Padres, who were, without an exception, a pleasant set of men. There were five missions established round this great bay of St. Francisco; they were named as follows: the mission of Dolores, St. Clara, St. José, St. Francis Solana, and St. Rafail.

They were all built in the same manner, an immense walled-in enclosure, entered by gates; a range of houses, or rather rooms, were erected all along the walls, with a door and windows in each, the roof extending about eight feet clear of the houses, supported by posts, and forming a piazza, or corridor, the entire length of the range; the flooring of both apartments, and corridor, were formed of square red tile, generally washed every day, and had a very clean appearance: at most of the missions, the roofing of the houses, church, sheds for cattle, &c., were all tile.

At an angle of this great square, generally, the chapel is erected: they have all loud-toned bells, the tolling of which is heard afar off; and, in one instance, from its vicinity to calm water and mountainous ground, each knock on the bell was echoed several times, conveying an unusual sound to the ear of the listener. There are few of these missions that have not good accommodation for from one thousand

to fifteen hundred families to dwell in, besides the cattle sheds.

You may form an idea of the extent of these stations, when I state, that from my own observation, and the information I received from the Padres, that amongst the five missions I have mentioned, there are, at least, five thousand Indians living in, and attached to, the establishments, and between two and three hundred whites; both the missions and white residents own thousands of horses, mules, and sheep, domesticated; they will sell you a bullock for four or five dollars, as many sheep as you require for something less than one dollar a head, and if you have no cash, they will take goods in exchange.

I may say, most of their fancy goods, grains, &c. come from the Sandwich Islands, and they give in trade for them, the fur skins of various animals, timber sawed up into planks and boards, hides, tallow, cheese, &c. In conversation with the different Padres, I was highly entertained by their detailing to me anecdotes respecting the first formation of these Jesuit missions, and conversion of the Indians to the Roman Catholic religion. When their predecessors first came, and erected these establishments, they were not on the extensive scale they are at present. A small inclosure, a small

chapel, and a few houses, sufficed to accommodate the few that accompanied them.

The Indians were in a wild and perfectly un-Christianised state, and the various tribes that inhabit and hunt through the country not unfrequently formed temporary alliances for the purpose of making a descent upon the mission and plundering it of every article it contained. Thus frequently the establishments were laid waste. Still the Jesuits persevered, obtained a fresh supply of necessaries, cultivated patches of land about them, lived on its produce, the fish out of the bay and river, the game from the forest, and ultimately succeeded in the establishing of their missions.

One of the padres here, who had put in a long service at his mission, told me that the last act of hostility towards them was against his establishment. The "Wallack" and the "Shoshons," or Snake Indians, formed an alliance and advanced on the mission with overwhelming force and in a very formidable manner. When they came near the gate or entrance, they yelled and warhooped fearfully; but, instead of making a useless defence and getting his followers all scalped, he flung open the gates and walked out boldly to meet them unarmed and alone.

This act staggered the wildest of the wild men

that he now confronted. Several of the chiefs and a number of warriors passed him, leaving the chief body of the men outside. They searched the entire establishment minutely over for guns or ammunition, and, finding nothing but a few well-worn spades, shovels, and other implements of agriculture, they kicked those about, and, with feelings of the most profound contempt, they left the mission.

A head chief of the "Wallacks" had a few words of Spanish, and addressed the padre, who was waiting their pleasure outside, with "What use live here? no gun, no deer, plenty of buffalo, plenty elk, plenty every thing. No gun, no shoot. Pshaw! dig, dig the ground, no good. Big fool you, big fool all. Go to sleep." And, after giving a withering look of contempt at his reverence, he joined his own people, and the entire party set off as they came, yelling and shouting, without taking any thing with them.

The missions were never troubled by the wild Indians afterwards, but they were often plundered and left nearly in ruins by various gangs of fellows getting up temporary revolutions on a small scale, merely for the purpose of more effectually plundering the missions and, I may add, the houses of the Spanish, Mexican, American, and European residents of the country. These gangs of robbers (I can term

them nothing else) are formed of runaway seamen from whalers, runaway sailors and marines from men-of-war, and a number of Indians, whose scamping propensities make them outcasts from their tribes.

There may be residing on shore a man who has once enjoyed better society, but whose conduct has been loose and general character so reckless, that every one shuns him. Such a leader, most likely, this gang will have, and his superior education will make them act with more certainty and do double the mischief they would otherwise even dream of.

This plundering party will, perhaps, number from two to five hundred, and, after sacking two or three missions, or a small town, with a score or two of merchants' and other residents' houses, will be forsaken by their temporary leader, break up into small parties of fours, sixes, or twelves, and infest the whole country as daring robbers. These small parties are generally accompanied in their predatory excursions by two or three Indians, whose dexterity in using the "lasso" makes them a desirable acquisition to the gang of robbers.

The "comerciant*o*," or merchant, the gentleman travelling for his own amusement, or, in fact, any traveller passing from town to town with a pair

of saddle-bags behind him on his horse, must, one and all, be fully armed with pistols in his holsters, long knife in his belt, a carabine by his side, and a sword in his right hand, ready for instant defence; and the nature of the attack will be from a distance: however, I will explain.

Every man, both honest and dishonest, in California has his own horse, as a very good-looking, active one can be purchased, tamed to carry the saddle and rider, from the Indians for four or five dollars; so that every one, I may add, of both sexes, ride in California. No one walks far but the hunter, and he is carried in a canoe a long way up the river before he strikes into the forest after the animals he is in pursuit of. This last class of men are the most wild, daring, yet friendly and honest, of the lower class of the white population of California.

Well, as the robber, as well as the honest man, are equally mounted, sometimes a very interesting steeple chace ensues, ground rough, not being previously chosen, occasionally leaping over pools of water, large stones, and fallen trees. The Indians, who use the lasso, generally keep the lead, to strive and throw the noose over either the man or horse they are pursuing.

It is made of thongs of bullock hide twisted into a small rope, about thirty or forty feet long, with a

noose formed by a running knot at the end of it. One end of this lasso is fastened to the back of the saddle: the entire length of it is kept in a coil in the right hand, and, after two or three swings of it over their head, they will throw it with such accuracy, that the smallest object will come within the noose.

Thus, then, if an equestrian traveller does not keep a good look out as he is passing by a bush or thicket, one of these lassos may be thrown out, the noose, falling over his head, will be jerked tight round his body, and; in the twinkling of an eye, he will be dragged off his horse, and away into the bush to be stripped of every thing he has.

By all the accounts I have heard, and from what I have seen, the robbers of California are the most active in the world: the end of the dangerous lasso being firmly fastened to the saddle, enables the rider, as soon as his victim, either man or animal, is noosed, to wheel round his horse, and dash off like an Arab, dragging whatever he has fast after him.

There is one method of averting the fall of the lasso noose over the body of a man either on foot or horseback. If he holds (as he always ought) either sword or gun in his right hand, when he sees the lasso coming, let him instantly raise either and his arm in an horizontal position, and if the noose does

fall true, it cannot run further down, being stopped by the sword, gun, or extended arm; then fling it off quick, or it may be jerked tight round the neck. I have known this subterfuge save many a man from robbers, and perhaps murderers.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE FUR HUNTERS, AND THE PLUNDERING GANGS. — A BOLD HUNTER, IN COMPANY WITH A COMERCIANTO OR MERCHANT, DEFEATS ROBBERS; AN ACCOUNT OF THE AFFAIR. — THE PADRE'S FIRST METHOD OF CONVERTING THE INDIANS. — INDIANS COME IN AT LAST AND ATTACH THEMSELVES TO THE MISSIONS. — THE ESTABLISHMENTS ARE ENLARGED. — THE PADRE'S PRESENT INFLUENCE OVER THE INDIANS. — HIS METHOD OF DRIVING THEM TO PRAYERS. — THE LEISURE HOURS OF THE INDIANS. — THEIR GAMES AND AMUSEMENTS. — THE SABBATH AT THE MISSIONS. — BULL, BEAR, BADGER, AND DOG FIGHTING. — ANIMATED APPEARANCE OF THE INDIANS.

THE hunter (though rarely) has been set upon by robbers for the sake of the pack of furs he was carrying on his back to some of the sea-port towns on the coast to dispose of; but as the fur-hunters are generally on foot, and from habit of watching about for either hostile Indians or wild animals, they are always on their guard, and as the robbers well know they are, to a man, riflemen who seldom miss their mark, they avoid them. During my rambles in the wilds and fastnesses of California, I became ac-

quainted with many of them, some from the back settlements of the United States, others from Canada.

I have hunted for months with them, and witnessed some conflicts between them and wild animals, in which the utmost daring and recklessness was exhibited by the hunter. These are not the men that robbers like to encounter, but I have said they sometimes take a fancy to the valuable pack of furs which, if they find any facility of obtaining, they make the attempt. It is the very climax of cruelty to plunder these poor fellows of packs, which were procured only by outlaying for months, in the depths of the forest and wilds of the country, and not unfrequently in the hunting grounds of a tribe of hostile Indians.

I once hunted for three months in company with a hunter well known in California. In idea, he was wild, and imaginative in the extreme; but, in his acts of daring, &c., the most cool and philosophic fellow I ever knew. A comercianto, or merchant at St. Francisco, on whose veracity I know from experience I can depend, told me the following story of this man, which will at once illustrate his general character.

This hunter was, some months before I had fallen

in with him, making the best of his way down the valley of the Tule Lakes from the interior, with a heavy pack of furs on his back, his never-erring rifle in his hand, and his two dogs by his side. He was joined at the northernmost end of the valley by the merchant I have spoken of, who was armed only with sword and pistols. They had scarcely cleared the valley when a party of robbers galloped out before them. There were four whites fully armed, and two Indians with the lassos coiled up in their right hands "ready for a throw."

The hunter told the merchant, who was on horseback, to dismount instantly "and to cover." Fortunately for them, there was a good deal of thicket, and trunks of large trees that had fallen were strewed about in a very desirable manner. Behind these logs the merchant and the hunter quickly took up their position, and as they were in the act of doing so, two or three shots were fired after them without effect. The hunter coolly untied the pack of furs from his back and laid them beside him. "It's my opinion, merchant," said he, "that them varmint there wants either your saddle-bags or my pack, but I reckon they'll get neither." So he took up his rifle, fired, and the foremost Indian, lasso in hand, rolled off his horse. Another discharge from the

rifle and the second Indian fell, whilst in the act of throwing his lasso at the head and shoulders of the hunter as he raised himself from behind the log to fire. "Now," said the hunter as he reloaded, laying on his back to avoid the shots of the robbers, "that's what I call the best of the schrimmage, to get them brown thieves with their lasso out of the way first. See them rascally whites now jumping over the logs to charge us in our cover."

They were fast advancing, when the rifle again spoke out and the foremost fell; they still came on to within about thirty yards, another fell, and the remaining two made a desperate charge up close to the log. The hunter, from long practice, was dexterous in reloading his gun. "Now, merchant," said he, "is the time for your pop-guns (meaning the pistols) and don't be at all narvous, keep a steady hand, and drop either man or horse. A man of them shan't escape."

The two remaining robbers were now up with the log, and fired each a pistol-shot at the hunter, which he escaped by dodging behind a tree close to, from which he fired with effect. As only one robber was left, he wheeled round his horse with the intention of galloping off, when the pistol bullets of the merchant shot the horse from under him. "Well done, mer-

chant," said the hunter, "you've stopped that fellow's gallop." As soon as the robber could disentangle himself from the fallen horse, he took to his heels and ran down a slooping ground as fast as he could. The hunter drew his tomahawk from his belt, and gave chace after him. As he was more of an equestrian than a pedestrian, the nimbleness of the hunter soon shortened the distance between them, and the last of the robbers fell.

Thus perished this dangerous gang of six, by the single hand of this brave hunter, and, as the "comercianto" informed me, he acted as coolly and deliberately as if he were shooting tame bullocks for the market. The affair was rather advantageous to the hunter, for, on searching the saddle-bags and pockets of the robbers, he pulled forth some doubloons, and a few dollars, with other valuables they had, no doubt, a short time previously, taken from some traveller; the saddle-bags, arms, and accoutrements of the four white men were packed up, and made fast on the saddles of two horses, the hunter mounted a third, the merchant mounted another, his horse being shot, and thus they left the scene of action, the bodies of the robbers to the wolves, who were howling about them, and entered St. Francisco in triumph.

The merchant told me he pressed this hunter to take money from him, for saving his life, but he would receive no favour from him but one, and that was a bed in his house to sleep in whenever he came to St. Francisco; a room was at once allotted to his use, and he seems to enjoy the occupation of it much. "And that is the reason," said the merchant to me, "why you see him loitering about my house so much."

To return to the hospitable Padres: they informed me, that after the Indians ceased to annoy them, they continued their agricultural pursuits for some time, yet no Indians came in; a general council was held between them, and it was resolved to entrap some of the wild Indians, bring them to the mission by force, if necessary, treat them kindly for a little while, and let them go again. To succeed in this project, it was necessary to procure thirty or forty friendly Indians, from the more southern missions, that had been longer established; these Indians were soon at the new missions, and stragglers from the various surrounding tribes brought in, fast by the feet and hands.

At first, they had an idea they were going to be killed, or tortured for former doings; but when they saw no signs of hostility at the mission, the cords

that tied their hands and feet cast off, themselves free, and an abundant meal spread out before them, they seemed more at their ease ; after a few days of good living, the Padres would give them a present of a small quantity of gunpowder, to kill game with, or perhaps a small axe, kettle, or some minor article ; then the gates would be opened, and the Indians would walk out, accompanied by one of the fathers, shaking them by the hand ; and with looks of kindness, and signs conveying to them the impression, that they were welcome back at any time to the mission. The Indians, in marching off, generally gave the most provokingly ludicrous looks, laughing outright, as much as to say, " This is the best joke ever we knew."

This, as it were kidnapping system, was continued for some time, and with the desired effect, for when the present of powder was out, they came in for more, lounged about the mission for a few days, and went away again ; at last their friends came with them, some bringing their squaws and children, and experiencing such continued kindness, and snug quarters, they finally settled at the mission, and hundreds soon followed the example. The accommodation at the various establishments became too limited ; then it was that the Indians first commenced manual labour,

to extend the area of the mission square, by building extensive walls, and many houses, inside, for the accommodation of their friends who were anxious to join them: thus these missions became enlarged to the extent they now are.

The Padres now have perfect control over the Indians of the missions, they insist on their performance of their allotted work, during a certain number of hours each day, either in agricultural pursuits, or tending the immense droves of cattle that are grazing around the mission. Previous to the hour of prayers, particularly on Sunday mornings, the Padre will take a look into the chapel, and if they are not all there before the tolling of the bell ceases, he will mount a mule, ride round the square, whip in hand, and drive the lazy fellows on before him: it seemed to create prime fun amongst the rest, when any one would catch a blow of the Padre's whip across the legs.

After the working hours are over, these mission squares present a very animated scene, — violins and guitars playing in a lively manner, to the waltzers and fandango dancers, on one side, whilst groups of Indians, with their own dull sounding drums, and guttural songs, are merrily at work dancing in their own wild, yet picturesque, way, at another side of

the square, the centre being occupied by groups of Indians engaged earnestly at their various games.

Sunday, after prayers, is the day appointed for the great merry making; the Indians then enjoy, outside the mission, horse-racing, bull, dog, bear, badger, and cock fighting; one must see a scene of this kind to form an idea of it; the yells and whoops of the Indians as the business of the day proceeds; the groans and roars of the tortured bulls, bears, and dogs, that are fighting; the singing of the women, the dancing of the men, on boarded platforms erected for the purpose; the beating of the drums,—all combine to make such an infernal noise, that one who is present for the first time will gladly put a finger in each ear, and run away from it.

There is only one part of this wild exhibition to be admired, and that is, the personal appearance of the Indians: on particular occasions of this kind, they invariably put on the costume they wore whilst in their original wild state; all their ornaments are carefully arranged, their paint laid on in their most perfect manner, and when excited by their various games, as they move rapidly to and fro, their general aspect is magnificent.

CHAPTER XVII.

SPLENDID COSTUME OF THE INDIANS. — GENERAL COSTUME OF THE CALIFORNIAN RESIDENTS. — FORESTS ON THE COAST OF CALIFORNIA. — AN ACCOUNT OF THE WILD FOWL IN THE WOODS, AND FISH IN THE RIVERS. — DIRECTIONS FOR SPORTSMEN IN CALIFORNIA. — THEIR PROPER "FIT OUT."— CAMPING AT NIGHT, THE FUN OF IT. — GOOD LIVING. — BEARS VISIT THE ENCAMPMENT. — SOME ACCOUNT OF THE WILD BEASTS OF THE WOODS. — THE GRISLY BEAR, ITS STRENGTH AND FEROCITY. — A HUNTER AND I ATTACKED BY A GRISLY BEAR. — DANGEROUS CONFLICT WITH HIM. — THE HUNTER ENDS THE BATTLE. — HIS OPINION OF THE DEAD BEAR. — HE CUTS OFF THE CLAWS FOR A NECKLACE.

THE general costume of nearly all the Californian Indians gives them rather an interesting appearance; when fully dressed, their hair, which has been loose, is tied up, either with a coronet of silver, or the thongs of skin, ornamented with feathers of the brightest colours; bracelets made in a similar manner are wore; breeches and leggings of doeskin, sowed, not unfrequently, with human hair; a kind of kilt of varied coloured cloth or silk, fastened by a scarf, round their waist; suspended from this scarf, hangs

the long knife, on the left side, the tomahawk on the right, and as they are almost always on horseback, the carabine, or rifle, hangs on the left side of the saddle, whilst they carry a lance, pointed with iron, in the right hand; the face and body generally painted according to the fancy of the party. The women wear a cloth petticoat, died either blue or red, doeskin shirt, and leggings, with feathered bracelets round their waist; their hair is always loose, and divided in the centre at the front.

Whilst on the subject of costumes, I may as well describe to you that of the Californians who are not Indians. The men wear breeches and leggings of doeskin. The leggings are fastened by coloured garters; their shoes are generally embroidered; a jacket of any colour, but generally blue, and trimmed with scarlet. The hair long, platted, and tied behind with ribbons; a silk handkerchief round the head, and over that the "sombrero," or hat, which is of an oval shape and broad-brimmed. The women dress as all Spaniards along the coast of South America do.

Along the coast of Upper California, the black and white pine grow in great luxuriance and attain an immense height, forming magnificent forests to hunt through. The shady magnolias are also beautiful, and there is also a variety in looking at the

prickly pear tree, on which the cochineal insect feeds. You will fall in frequently with extensive ranges of hazel nut, which afford fine cover for the land birds, and are literally alive with game. The turkey, pheasant, peacock of a brownish white, and guinea fowl, grouse, quail, partridge, prairie hen, green parrot, and the blackbird. All these birds are in abundance, and the sportsman, having an unlimited range, can act as he pleases.

If he should tire of this kind of sport, he can take his gun in one hand, a stout salmon fishing-rod in the other, enter a boat or canoe, and in the rivers he will find plenty of large perch, trout, carp, salmon, and the white cat-fish. Another day he may cruise about either rivers or lakes, and shoot as many swans, geese, and ducks of various kinds as he pleases. All this game I have mentioned can be easily found and obtained by any ordinary sportsman alone; but, if he is a spirited fellow, "one of the right sort," and determined for a hunt after the nobler game of the forests and mountains, he must engage an experienced Indian, or, if possible, an old hunter, a man who knows well the country, the haunts and ways of the various animals to be pursued.

Any hunter leaving the sea-port towns, and going into the interior after furs, will be glad of your com-

pany. Before you start, purchase a couple of pair of stout doe-skin leggings from the Indians. They will save your legs from many a scratch of a bush or the bite of a snake you may perchance tread upon. Well, you are rigged in costume; you have your favourite gun, a bag of bullets, some spare lead to make more, and a sufficient stock of fine powder to last you for some time, and off you start in company with some trusty hunter, bidding good bye to your downy bed for some time, as I promise you the fascination of the woods and wilds of California will cause your absence to be longer than you expect.

As to camping out every night, there is no fear of catching cold, as you have a roaring log fire near your feet when you're asleep; and sleep soundly you will after a day's hunting on foot, one of you keeping watch whilst the other sleeps, lest some wild animal, or equally wild Indian, might disturb your pleasant dreams. The black and brown bears may come near your fire; but you need not trouble yourself about a dozen of them, as, in most instances, they will let you alone and keep a respectful distance, sitting on their haunches scratching themselves with their fore paws, wondering what brought you there, and taking a look round to ascertain whether you have any spare meat left for their supper.

Bruin is quite a philosophic brute; for when he finds there is nothing for him but the lead from the hunter's rifle, he goes through a few comical manœuvres for the amusement of the party, then waddles off into the gloom of the forest, and, as he can't just now get supper, he goes to bed without it. Thus camping out at night before a fine fire, hearing hunting stories, and receiving the ludicrous visits of Bruin and his fraternity, is the best fun in the world. Besides, you enjoy the best of good living,—venison, buffalo meat, salmon, or trout, as you please; and the cream of the joke is, as long as you are out hunting you live like an alderman, and have nothing to pay.

Never regret the want of bread with your meals: parched Indian corn will do as well. Neither fret for the want of your wine: some pure water out of the rivulet, drunk out of the hollow of your hand, will be better: it will be the most cooling and refreshing beverage after an exciting day's hunt. Thus, after a three or four months' hunting, good living, and free exercise in the pure air of the country and mountains, you will return to the town you started from as stout as a Trojan.

Now, let me enumerate the fowls and beasts you will fall in with during your sporting tour. If you should be out at any time from November till March,

you will find the prairies one moving mass of swans, geese, and ducks, of various kinds, grazing; but it's no use in wasting a charge of powder on them, for they are generally so intent on feeding, and so numerous through the long grass, that you can knock as many as you like down with a cock stick. In the depths of the forest, in the thickets, in the rocky ground, and occasionally out on the prairies, you will fall in with the "mustang," or wild horse, the buffalo, deer, the swift wild goat, termed berendos; antelope, elk, prairie dogs, hares, rabbits, red panther, or peuma, commonly called the American lion; spotted leopard, jaguar; black, white, and grey wolves; blue red, and black fox, porcupine, badger, hedgehog, musk-rat, land and sea otter, racoons, squirrels; the brown, black, and grisly bears, &c.

This last-named animal, from its great size, muscular power, nimbleness in running, and formidable claws, is a trying antagonist to encounter. So highly is a man honoured who conquers one of these beasts, that the Indians wear their claws strung in a necklace, as a marked badge of their bravery. The black and brown bears will not attack you if you let them alone and not wound or injure them or their cubs; but the grisly bear will walk out upon you unawares from the thicket or, perhaps, from behind

some rocks, so that in the fastnesses of the mountains the hunters are invariably on their guard.

Some idea may be formed of the strength of this terrific animal when I state that they get amongst a herd of buffalo, jump on the largest bull amongst them, and kill him with apparent ease. They are also hard to kill, and will run and tear with their claws as long as they have breath in their carcase.

I was hunting one day, at the foot of Mount St. Bernardino, situated in the parallel of 34° north latitude, in company with the hunter I have already spoken of. We were quietly seated, discussing a piece of roast venison, when the ugly visage of a grisly bear peeped out from some rocks about twenty yards on one side of us. We instantly jumped up and moved some distance off. The huge beast gradually drew himself out from his concealment and trotted briskly down to our fire, where, a few minutes before, we were roasting our venison. Not finding much there for him, he commenced galloping after us. The hunter said, "I reckon this is an ugly customer. I'll take the first fire."

The shot was a true one: the ball hit the brute somewhere about the head, for the blood was dripping down his face, and he gave a roar that echoed through the woods. "What are you gaping at?" said the

hunter to me as I was watching the bear, expecting to see him roll over every second. "Why don't you fire? A steady hand now!" I dropped on one knee to make sure of my aim, and fired. "That's into his carcase. Give him the other barrel," said the hunter. I did so, and with effect; yet he pursued us. "This is a devil in arnest," said my companion. "Three balls in him now, and on he comes as fresh as ever. Run on, you, and load. I'm ready for him now."

"I did so, and was quickly ready. As soon as my friend discharged his rifle into our pursuing antagonist, he ran past me further on to load again, whilst I stood and fired both barrels again at the bear. We continued on in this manner at a short distance from our dangerous enemy, like riflemen retreating. One stopped to fire while the other retreated to reload, until nearly a mile of ground was passed over, when this huge grisly bear dropped on his haunches and gave a thrilling roar, after receiving fifteen balls from our two guns.

I relate this incident merely for the purpose of conveying to you an idea of the extreme tenacity of life these dangerous brutes possess. However, I have seen them killed with a single ball, and many of them with the second shot. But this one, that we

ran so much risk with, was unusually large and fierce; and the hunter said, when he buried his tomahawk into the skull of the brute, as he yet, though blind with the shot, kept on his haunches; "I'm of opinion, grisly bear, you're the biggest and hardest critter of your kind to kill ever I shot at."

As the hunter examined the huge brute now dead before us, he said, "One gun would never have killed that bear. See, he has five bullet-holes in his face and head. Only look at his claws! I know well that the greatest Indian chief on either side of the Rocky Mountains would be proud to wear them as a necklace!" He cut off the paws, and told me they were mine. I declined, and said he must keep them. "Very well, comrade," said he. "I'll just clean them handsome off, and wear them myself as a trophy. I judge there's not a man, either Ingin or white, in California, will have such a set of claws dangling on his breast."

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE HUNTER SKINS THE BEAR. — WE MOVE ON. — WOLVES ATTACK THE BEAR'S CARCASE. — THE HUNTER OBLIGED TO THROW AWAY THE SKIN, AS THE PEUMAS WERE FOLLOWING US. — THE NATURALIST IN CALIFORNIA. — THE INSECTS. — THE ANTIQUARIAN. — MAGNIFICENT RUINS OF ANCIENT CITIES. — REMARKS. — MY LAST HUNT IN CALIFORNIA. — MORE HUNTERS JOIN US. — PASSAGE DOWN THE SACRAMENTO RIVER. — INDECISIONS. — ARRIVAL OF THE BRIGANTINE HOUND AT ST. FRANCISCO. — AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE. — CAPTAIN TRAINER. — THE CAPTAIN'S INTENDED CRUISE TO THE WESTWARD. — I MAKE ARRANGEMENTS TO ACCOMPANY HIM IN THE HOUND. — WE SAIL FROM ST. FRANCISCO.

He next turned to and skinned the animal with experienced despatch, rolled up the skin into as small a parcel as possible, and we moved on rapidly from the place where the carcase lay, the hunter telling me that the smell of it would attract the wolf, peuma, and jaguar. He was right in his conjectures, for we were scarcely five hundred yards off when a fearful growling and ferocious roars assailed our ears. "The wolves are at work now on old grisly Bruin. Did you hear that roar? That's a

peuma that has leaped into the throng. I know their music well."

We trudged on, but two or three growls from the thicket as we passed by told the hunter something, the meaning of which he knew well. "They have smelled out this here skin I'm carrying." He untied it and cast it away from him, saying, "It's too fresh, and smells too strong to carry further, and I don't want to feel a peuma jump on my back to grab it."

A naturalist, if he felt inclined to pass the time so, might procure an extensive collection of insects in California; but all I will say on the subject here is, that those who annoyed me most were the blue-tailed fly, the sand fly, the mosquito, and the common flea. This last-mentioned insect is annoying to every stranger, from the southern towns of Chili, in South America, to the northernmost part of California. In every mission, in every presidio, and in every house, there are thousands of them.

If they would only keep in the houses there would be some cessation of the annoyance, but the little tormentors are not satisfied with that, they must come out into the streets to enjoy the fresh air, the warm sun, and a fine climate, and keep jumping about like as many miniature kangaroos, to the no trifling torment of perhaps a few merchants and ship

captains, who may be particularly engaged in some business conversation. If you watch the group for a few minutes you will invariably see one, two, or three of the party raise a leg, rub it smartly, and curse the insects. They are certainly a great nuisance, and I think might be got rid of, if the women would only get their houses swept out every day as the English housewives do.

The antiquarian will also find amusement in the interior of Upper California. During my hunting excursions we came upon the ruins of what must once have been magnificent cities: the remains of old towns, castles, &c. of curious construction are frequently to be met with between the sandy plains of the Calarado and the mountains that form the eastern valley of the Tule Lakes. What makes them doubly interesting is the fact that their origin, or the race of people that inhabited them, is involved in perfect mystery. There is not even a tradition amongst the Indians respecting them. The beings that once raised those great cities and occupied them must have been long an extinct race, and the owl, the bat, and the grisly bear are the only tenants of these magnificent ruins.

I have visited California Alta or Upper California at three different periods; crossed and recrossed the

country several times from the shores of the Pacific to the Rocky Mountains, in company with some "crack hunters;" frequently in a hostile Indian hunting ground, and more than once getting entangled in their ambuscades, all of which created many incidents of an exciting kind; but as a detail of even a few of these adventures would make this work too large, and perhaps bore the reader, I shall not now enter upon them, particularly as I wish him to accompany me far west, amongst the islands of the Indian Archipelago, where we shall visit a strange race of human beings.

My last excursion through California was a four months' hunt, which terminated on the banks of the "Rio Buena Ventura," or, as it is sometimes called, the "Sacramento" River, about two hundred and fifty miles from its mouth. In crossing the country we fell in with two other hunters, who had been very successful. We exchanged some of our furs with the Indians for two stout canoes, put in all our skins, and enjoyed a pleasant passage down the river, every night encamping on shore, and occasionally amusing ourselves with the wild animals that showed themselves on the river-bank, until we entered the great bay of St. Francisco, into which this large river empties itself.

I again trespassed on the hospitality of the padre at the mission at Yerba Buena, although I received a pressing invitation to make myself at home in the presidio as long as I remained. The usual season for whaling on the western coast of North America being ended, there was scarcely a probability that any whale-ship, either English or American, would visit this port, so that there was every prospect of my having to wait some time before I could get a passage off to the westward.

I had some idea of going in one of the small coasting vessels to some of the more southern ports, as I might there find some vessel bound off in the direction I intended to go. At another moment I would form the notion of remaining where I was until an opportunity offered, as I had time enough to spare for that purpose, before the appointed time arrived for the Stratford to be at Tahiti.

Circumstances soon afterwards put to flight all my indecisive plans and gave my thoughts a direct range for the future. One morning, while taking my usual walk with a friend along the shore of the bay, our attention was directed to a vessel under a cloud of canvas, sailing fast up to the usual anchorage. The hull appeared to be beautifully moulded, the masts with a great rake aft, she had snow-white

sails, and was brigantine rigged. The seaman-like manner in which she was handled and brought to her moorings, all attracted our admiration.

The custom is here, as in all distant ports, to go off and welcome the stranger. I accompanied some others in a boat, and, on ranging alongside, was surprised to find myself hailed in a friendly manner by the captain of this handsome vessel, who turned out to be an old and highly esteemed acquaintance that I formerly fell in with at Talcahuana, the seaport of Conception in Chili. He was astonished, yet glad to meet me here, and, after giving some orders on board his vessel, he accompanied us on shore, where the evening was pleasantly spent by each recounting to the other the particulars of occurrences since we last met.

Captain Trainer, such was his name, when I saw him last, owned and commanded a large brig, with which he traded along the western coasts of South and North America, and among the islands of the Pacific, for some years. Shortly after we parted at Conception he sold the brig, which was getting rather leaky, to a merchant in Valparaiso, and soon after purchased the brigantine named the "Hound," from an American, who had only a few days previously brought her from the United States, and he seemed greatly delighted with her.

She was built at Baltimore, was one of the regular clippers, and sailed "like a witch;" was about two hundred tons burthen, and had a light draught of water. Her cabin was also tastefully fitted up for respectable passengers when any might occasionally offer. Trainer was an Englishman by birth, open and fearless in the expression of his face, of middle size, stoutly built, and every inch of him a thorough sailor. He informed me that he was trading along the coast, endeavouring to pick up some furs, &c., and that after taking in some fresh water, and doing some repairs to his rigging here, he intended to start off far to the westward, to trade among the islands of the Indian Archipelago for turtle, tortoise-shell, bech-de-mar, dye-woods, &c.; and, after some time, to call at Tahiti for a quantity of arrowroot, pearl, pearl-shell, &c., which he expected would be ready for him after a few months.

I was now getting tired of St. Francisco and the surrounding country, turned over matters in my mind, and after considering (as I have said) that the time of his expected arrival at the Georgian Islands would answer my views perfectly, I came to the determination of arranging with him for my passage during the time, to be landed at Tahiti on his return to the eastward. This turn of matters

pleased the jolly captain much, and I also anticipated much pleasurable variety during a cruise with him for a few months.

In three days after his arrival he was ready for sea again, and, after taking a friendly leave of those on shore, whose marked kindness I shall long remember, we embarked in the schooner, and was soon, aided by a stiff breeze, cutting our way through the water out of this magnificent bay. On getting well out into the open sea, where the schooner, as it were, skipped along the surface, the easy manner in which she steered and her buoyant action told me at once that she was a delightful craft to sail in. In trading among islands in the Pacific with natives it is also necessary to have both vessel and crew well armed, and prepared against treachery. This vessel had four small carronade-guns and a long brass nine-pounder, small arms sufficient, and a lively crew of sixteen men.

CHAPTER XIX.

STEER WESTERLY. — FINE WEATHER. — CROSS THE MERIDIAN OF 180°. — STEER FOR THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS. — TAPUTONEA OR DRUMMONDS ISLAND. — ANCHOR OFF THE TOWN OF UTIROO. — ASPECT OF THE ISLAND. — ITS PRODUCTIONS. — AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATIVES AND THEIR COSTUME. — COMICAL WAR DRESS. — DENSENESS OF THE POPULATION. — CANABILISM. — POLYGAMY. — THE HOUND TABOOED. — DANGER IN TRADING AT THESE ISLANDS. — OLD WOWMA; HIS METHOD OF SALUTATION.

AFTER clearing the land the wind held on for some days from the N.W. and kept the schooner close hauled to it, steering westerly and southerly, we sighted several small islands, ran on over a great tract of ocean, experiencing generally good weather, without any incident worth naming, until we arrived on the equator in the meridian of 180°. The course was shaped for the centre of the Kingsmill group of islands, came in sight of "Taputonea," or Drummonds Island, steered for the north-west end of it, entered one of the openings in the broad reef that stretches out everywhere round those islands, and came to an anchor off the town of Utiroo, at a re-

spectful distance, so as not to be too close to either the shore or natives on it.

This is one of the islands of coraline formation which has a barrier reef of rocks and coral extending from two to four miles out from the shore, which effectually breaks the swell and leaves smooth water between it and the shore. The island lies in 1° 25′ south lat., and 174° 50′ east long., is about thirty-five or forty miles long; it is very narrow, in fact, in some places not more than a mile; in the widest part that I visited I think it certainly did not exceed three miles in width; the centre is considerably elevated in some parts, but the low ground and near the shore is only a few feet above high-water mark.

The pandanus trees in great luxuriance fringe the beach round the island, and the interior is irregularly covered with cocoa-nut and bread-fruit trees, and some patches of agreeably scented shrubs, melons, pumpkins, &c., grow in luxuriance here, but the natives pay little or no attention to their culture. Though there are many hogs ranging and feeding through the distant cocoa-nut groves, they are not much used or encouraged near the habitations or towns, from their nasty method of feeding, and the disagreeable smell they produce. Poultry are in great abundance and are taken every care of, par-

ticularly the cocks, the natives of every island in this group being madly fond of cock-fighting; in fact, cock-fighting, fishing, and war seem to engross all their attention.

This island, from its position, (1° 25′ south lat., and 174° 50′ east long.) is in a warm climate; the natives require little clothing, indeed, I may say, they generally go naked, occasionally only throwing a light mat over the body to keep off the cold sea breeze which sometimes sweeps over the island; however, they generally keep themselves weather proof by greasing their bodies over with cocoa-nut oil. This, in some degree, preserves them from the intenseness of the sun's rays in calm weather, or the cool sea breeze in rough.

In war time their personal appearance is ludicrously changed: they wear a kind of cuirass or armour, made thick and strong, of the cocoa-nut bark fibre, and strips of bark interlined, which may sometimes save them from spears, arrows, &c., but is no proof against ball. The head is surmounted by an extraordinary looking apology for a helmet, in a conical shape, and made of dried fishes skin, with two or three feathers of various colours stuck in the top for a plume. To see a troop of warriors thus accoutred would create a laugh in the most

serious countenance; and the most amusing part of the exhibition is to observe them seriously staring and wondering what you are laughing at.

These islands are thickly inhabited, the people reside in towns or villages; there are four or five towns in this island, and Utiroo alone contains about four hundred houses. These various towns, and the chiefs who govern them, have civil wars with each other. They will thieve from you anything they can lay hold of, if care is not taken; cut off boats, murder the crews for any plunder they can get, and, on the whole, are a fierce, savage-looking set, particularly during their wars; canabalism is practised amongst them, yet an individual may land, live with them, and be hospitably entertained in perfect ease and safety, provided he conforms to their custom, particularly in costume, and has nothing whatever to lose or to be murdered for, and obtained by them.

I say he is safe here with these people under the circumstances I have mentioned, and we may all safely exclaim, so would any of us in a more civilised country or community, provided we had nothing to lose. "Poverty is a sore thing," yet it carries safety with it every where, even here among the savages. As usual in almost all the unchristianised islands of

the Pacific, polygamy is here practised. A man may have as many wives as he likes; and even in this matter the poor man enjoys the privilege of poverty, and has only one, seldom two wives. The chiefs have whole houses full of them; indeed, the noise of talking, laughing, and singing, issuing from some of these many-wived houses, caused me to imagine, at first, that there was some kind of jubilee meeting held within.

How in the name of goodness those chiefs manage to keep them from quarrelling with each other, or all in a state of strict discipline, I cannot tell; yet they do, and that effectually, I assure you. It is scarcely necessary for me to say that these people are in the very depths of heathenism; they give way to all sorts of barbarism and licentiousness, and I feel sorry to have it to say that the generality of ships touching here (mostly English and American whalers) so completely encourage this immorality and vileness, that it is now the regular custom at the Kingsmill group. Whenever a ship drops her anchor, the first offering from the shore is a deck-load of women.

As soon as the Hound let go her anchor, dozens of young women came alongside; and what appeared to be most horrible was the fact of their being brought there by their fathers, mothers, and brothers.

However, with the crew of the schooner they were apparently vexed and disappointed, as Captain Trainer had "tabooed" the ship,—that is, placed a restriction on her, arranged the crew in relief guards, with strict orders not to allow man, woman, or child on board without permission from him, and, to complete all, the boarding nettings were turned up, which effectually guarded the deck from intrusion or surprise.

Indeed, every precaution at such a place is absolutely necessary, particularly with a small vessel, as the natural treachery of the natives might induce them to board, which, if once successfully accomplished, would be the inevitable death of all the crew, plunder, and final destruction of the vessel. Such was the character of the natives, and such the island at which we lay at anchor in so guarded a manner, for the purpose of trading for beche-de-mar, turtleshell, &c. I may now also relate some of the occurrences at it, as they will illustrate farther and more particularly their manners and customs.

The Hound was scarcely moored in safety when a number of canoes put off from the shore and came alongside, laughing and jabbering away at a merry rate. They were all eagerly anxious to get on board, particularly twenty or thirty comely young women,

who considered that they at least had the privilege of stopping on board while the vessel lay there, as they were generally welcomed or favourably received by other ships that touched at their island; and it was some time before they could believe the reality, that the schooner was tabooed. Some laughed immoderately at the disappointed looks of others, but most of them, though they hung round the vessel for a short time afterwards, went on shore in a very sulky mood. However, the sailors rigidly obeyed their orders (though in a good-humoured manner) of not permitting any one to board without permission, so we had our vessel clear of the natives.

Captain Trainer had visited this island more than once before, and was immediately recognised by many of the natives, who called him "Tainey," which was as close a pronunciation of his name as they could give. As soon as the news reached the shore that it was "Tainey," an old man named "Wowma," a chief of one of the more southern towns or districts of this island, came off in a canoe; he was in the usual costume of the natives, that is, a small fine matting (made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut husk) round his loins, and another or coarser texture thrown over his shoulders after the fashion of a mantle. It was quite evident that he and

"Tainey," as he called the captain, were old acquaintances, and he renewed his friendship in the usual manner of this group of islands, that is, by taking a little congealed cocoa-nut oil out of a small gourd that was suspended from his left arm, and anointed the captain by rubbing it on his face, which ordeal he very sensibly, and with a ludicrously serious aspect, submitted to.

I was next introduced to old Wowma as a great man and passenger with him, and served in a similar manner. After giving my face a rub of the oil, the old chief gave me a proof that he picked up some words of English from the whalers, who often touched here, by exclaiming, "Me friendy you, you friendy me; all right." The first and second mates were also oiled, and then we were considered, as the old man said, "all right," that is, his friends and under his protection.

I was about wiping the oil off my face, when the captain told me not to do so during our first interview with the chief, as it would be considered by him insulting and a breaking of the contract of friendship already made. The oil or grease with which the chiefs anoint or, rather, mark their friends, is of different colours, caused by mixing up with it earths of various shades which exist on parts of the islands.

Sometimes pulverised charcoal or lamp-black is used, so that each chief has his particular colour; and any stranger bearing on his face either white, black, brown, red, &c., is under the protection of the chief whose colour he wears.

Wowma's mark was red; and each of us bearing the marks of his four fingers and thumb, drawn from our forehead to our chin down the face, presented certainly a very comical appearance, the effect being much increased by each laughing at the other. After this farce was over, Trainer, during a conversation with the chief, which consisted of various signs and grunts, was informed that there was a good many bundles of turtleshell collected on the island, but very little of that peculiar gelatinous fish which, in a dried state, brings so good a price in the Chinese market—the beche-de-mar. On the N. E. part or end of the island there was not much lately to be found about the reefs; but Wowma did not just now know what might be procured at the extreme S. W. end of the island, as he had not been there for some time, in consequence of a misunderstanding and civil war which existed between the chiefs on the island.

CHAPTER XX.

A SANDWICH ISLAND NATIVE ACTS AS INTERPRETER. — MY LANDING ON THE ISLAND. — YOUNG HOONOO, HIS INFLUENCE. — A NATIVE MESS. — SONG AND DANCE. — HOONOO ALLOTS A HOUSE TO ME. — ITS INTERNAL ARRANGEMENTS. — NATIVE CAMP. — MERRIMENT OF THE NATIVES. — HALF-A-DOZEN OF YOUNG GIRLS ENTER MY DORMITORY. — THEIR MIRTH. — THEIR OBJECT IN VISITING ME. — I TAKE REFUGE IN HOONOO'S HOUSE FOR THE NIGHT. — ABUNDANCE OF POULTRY. — TOWN OF POONA. — COCK-FIGHTING.

We were greatly aided in obtaining the desired information about the present trade and state of this group of islands by using or employing a native of the Sandwich Islands, who was now on shore here. He had been landed by a whaler, about two years previous to our visit, and spoke English so as to be understood by us. The information he gave to Trainer seemed to give him satisfaction, as to the turtleshell, &c. to be procured.

On the day following our arrival, the business of trading was commenced between the captain and the natives; and, although great numbers of natives were

round the vessel, some through curiosity, others to trade, and the noise was great, as the nettings were raised only on one side at the gangway, all was conducted on board in a very orderly manner. A flag was flying at the mast-head, as a signal for the natives of the time of trading on board, which was from 10 A. M. until 6 P. M. each day. The flag was then hauled down until the next day.

I had a conversation with the captain about the propriety or safety of going on shore. He told me he was obliged to remain on board, as they knew him to be the captain, or, as they called him, chief; and, if he should place himself incautiously in their power on shore, the most friendly of them would be treacherous enough to hold him until they would receive a large ransom for his release; but he assured me in the most positive manner that, if I liked to go on shore amongst them and examine the island, I should be not only safe, but hospitably received by the natives, and particularly Wowma's friends, who were some miles further off on the island.

The people of Utiroo were also his friends at present, so that I might go among them as I pleased; but he advised me strongly not to take any thing that could be coveted or pilfered from me on shore, as it sometimes happened that men were killed for even a

pocket-knife that a native might desire to possess. He told me also to bear Wowma's mark or insignia of friendship until the natives saw that I was a friend and under protection.

The third morning after our arrival I made my début on shore. The weather was warm and very fine, so that my entire dress consisted of only a shirt, trowsers, and straw hat; my face streaked with the reddish-coloured oil. I was received in a very clamorous but friendly manner. The throng of people around me was not so agreeable; and I soon found that they were feeling my garments to ascertain if I had any thing worth stealing or coveting. The crowd was so great, that I could scarcely advance, until a stout young chief, named Hoonoo, pushed with little ceremony the people off, took me by the arm, and led me away with him to his house, which was at the farther end of the town.

This habitation of his was like the rest of them in Utiroo, the walls built with stakes, the roof thatched with cocoa-nut leaves; in dimensions it was larger than some of them, as it belonged to a chief; in fact, he had two, another adjoining this, which he told me, through the interpreter, was to be mine during my stay. He had four wives, all comely to look upon, apparently happy, and decidedly merry, for they

continued giggling and laughing until he ordered them, by some native expression, to make less noise. A collation was now served up of broiled fish and a thick kind of treacle, which last I found to be manufactured from the cocoa-nut tree; but, as I had not an opportunity to witness the operation, I cannot, of course, describe it.

After this, the females favoured us with a deep sonorous chaunt for about half an hour, and ended the entertainment by a ludicrous kind of a dance, resembling a jig; and a general one it was, for all joined in it except the author of this book, who sat apart watching, with no small curiosity, this merry group. The interpreter, who was still with me, exerted himself as much as any of them, and was quite up to the affair. We had then an afternoon walk through the town, diving into houses here and there that belonged to my friend's intimate acquaintances. I could see in the distance that it was past the trading hour on board, as the flag was hauled down, and night was now drawing near. After a circuitous walk that afforded me much variety, I went back with Hoonoo to his house to rest for the night.

The adjoining one was arranged for my use. There was a thick coating of dried cocoa-nut tree

leaves spread all over the floor, tender branches of the pandanus were strewed over, and with a large matting on this, I may say soft bed, and another one to cover the persons of those who lay down, the sleeping arrangements were perfect. As for a pillow, a log of wood along the side of the house answered perfectly well. The sun descended below the horizon and night quickly followed. The Sandwich islander was with me: he appeared to be a very intelligent man, and, speaking English well enough to be understood, both informed and amused me with stories of these islanders.

I had the luxury (not one generally used by the natives) of a lamp of very primitive structure, which threw a dull though sufficient light over my present dormitory. It was nothing more than a section of a cocoa-nut shell, filled with cocoa-nut oil, a small pulpy kind of reed for a wick; it rested on a small mound of clay or sand in a corner, and well apart from the dried leafy bed, as a precaution against fire. The door of the house was merely of wicker-work, but strong enough to keep out the cocks and hens, and prevent their roosting with us.

We could hear the men and women laughing and singing in the other houses about until a late hour. I became at last tired of the native's talk, and was

about anticipating an agreeable sleep on my bed of leaves, in the clean looking mat, when a half-suppressed laugh, or tittering about the house, attracted my attention. On looking through the open crevices of this hut, I saw several figures moving about and peeping in upon us. I turned round to the interpreter, and was in the act of getting an explanation, when the apology for a door was opened, and in stalked half-a-dozen of young and well-looking girls.

Having seated themselves in the centre of the floor, the first thing they did was to look at me, then laugh heartily. A song was commenced and continued for several minutes, accompanied by the occasional clapping of hands, then another chorus of laughing, and all got up to caper and dance round the house and over the soft covering of the floor. "Well, thought I, these people are certainly very merry, and inclined to entertain their guest." I could perceive, by an occasional exclamation, that some of them had picked up a word or two of English from previous visitors.

They seemed to enjoy themselves in the very climax of merriment. When I asked the man what was all the fun about, he answered, grinning in a peculiar manner, "By-and-by, you'll see." They seemed at last to have partially tired themselves,

and again squatted on the bed of leaves. Some lay down. Their only dress consisted of a small cloth round the waist, which extended nearly to the knees. Two or three of them now stood up and spoke to me in the native language.

I was all along imagining that the entire performance was intended as an act of hospitality for my amusement, when my interpreter informed me that they were told to come here by Hoonoo, who had tabooed them all to me for wives. I was certainly amazed at first at this peculiar and immoral stretch of hospitality, on the part of my young friend the chief, but soon found out that such an act was customary with the strangers visiting those islands, and that it would be considered strange, unusual, and partially insulting to turn them out.

However, I acted a determined part, and told them I did not want one, not to speak of half-a-dozen wives; they told the interpreter they would stop where they were, that they were (in their English) "wiffy me," and would not stir. I was now informed that all women tabooed to any man, looked upon him as long as he remained as their husband, and that to turn them away would insult them and their friends, and that some of their male relatives might revenge the act. However, bribery has its

influence here as amongst civilised people, and I promised presents to all these young women, which compromised matters in some measure, though I was obliged to leave them in undisturbed possession of the building and go into Hoonoo's house, where I folded myself up in a mat and slept in a corner till daylight the next day.

They are all averse to eating any of the poultry that abounds here; however, I had one for breakfast, and after another dance and singing match, I walked about the town and neighbouring part of the island. There was only one annoyance during the excursion, and that was, the girls and their friends to whom I was to make some presents followed every where I went, until Hoonoo gave me a small club or staff of rank, and by shaking it at them, they annoyed me no farther. I visited some of the other towns further down the island, which all appeared to be thickly inhabited. The actions of the people appeared to be excited, and their minds at present engrossed, with the civil war which was going on between some of the chiefs on the southernmost part of the island.

At one of the towns named Poona, about twelve miles from Utiroo, a grand council was to meet, and old Wowma, who was on board our schooner, was summoned to attend at its deliberations. I was very

curious to see this meeting, and for the purpose of knowing what they were about, I procured the attendance of the interpreter.

In approaching the town we came in contact with a group of about one hundred people, excitingly and ardently engaged in cock-fighting. Being a stranger, and bearing the friendly mark of Wowma, a passage was at once made for me to the inside of the circle, where the poor cocks were fighting each other; two lay dead that had already been killed, and two more were engaged in a cruel conflict. The excitement of the natives appeared to be great when either of the birds were knocked over by the other. The noisy vociferations of this assemblage while thus engaged could be heard far off; there did not appear to be any betting or stakes laid on the combat; the whole affair was got up for the satisfaction of seeing the poor cocks destroy each other.

It is a very general amusement with these natives, even the old men look on with pleasure, and they all take a great delight in training up their birds for fighting. It was the first regular cock-fight that I was ever present at, and must say, that, whether meetings for such purposes occur in the Kingsmill islands or in civilised Europe, they are barbarous in the extreme.

CHAPTER XXI.

A GRAND COUNCIL OF WAR CHIEFS. — HATTA'S PARTY. — THE BUSINESS OF THE COUNCIL ENDS IN A ROW. — THE INTERPRETER AND I ESCAPE FROM THE COUNCIL-HOUSE. — HATTA'S DEATH. — WOWMA ADDRESSES THE EXCITED CROWD. — A COMPROMISE. — EXCURSION THROUGH THE ISLAND. — A FARTHER ACCOUNT OF THE NATIVES. — RETURN TO THE NORTH END OF THE ISLAND. — NATIVES STRIP ME OF MY CLOTHING. — ARRIVE AT THE TOWN OF UTIROO. — GO ON BOARD THE HOUND IN COMICAL COSTUME.

THE warriors were now assembling in front of the council-house, which was a long low one, constructed after their usual manner but more substantially, and thatched with cocoa-nut leaves; it was capable of containing about two hundred persons. At one end of it a large bed of leaves was laid with a mat on, as the place for the chiefs. Around the walls there was an array of warriors in three deep. These men belonged to various towns on the island, and accompanied their respective chiefs.

They were all clad in a cumbrous thick matting, which was their war dress, or cuirass; a curious

shaped fish-skin cap covered their heads, resembling a painter's paper cap. Some were armed with clubs of various shapes, but most of them had spears in their hands. They presented a rather laughable appearance, yet with a ferociously savage aspect; the chiefs entered and proceeded to the mat, where they seated themselves. I got a seat with the interpreter, beside our friend old Wowma. A low murmuring song was then commenced, and as parts of it terminated the warriors made a noise, by stamping their feet several times on the ground.

I was beginning to shake with a concealed laugh at the extreme singularity of the scene before me, which my interpreter observed and seriously warned me, by saying, "You laugh, vex chief, he break your head with club!" During the preliminaries of this curious meeting, one of the men near the doorway sneezed loudly, and was thrust out in the most unceremonious manner for thus disturbing the business. A ferocious-looking chief first spoke; for several minutes he addressed the assemblage in a rapid and furious manner. I was informed that the subject-matter of his speech was the detail of an insult he thought he received from another chief. Another speaker followed, whose action was very fine, manly,

and in every respect prepossessing. He was a bold, handsome-looking fellow.

A small man, named Hatta, whose face was streaked with black grease, now stood up. His appearance was that of a demon, his language was rapidly uttered, and, in giving utterance to his devilish threats, looked like a fiend. Several now stood up and endeavoured to obtain a hearing, but his noise and fury rendered what the others said perfectly inaudible. At last an able young chief, whose patience had been exhausted, suddenly jumped up and laid rather violent hands on the speaker. Other chiefs now interfered. The grim warriors in the back-ground, who formed Hatta's party, brandished their clubs, several spears were levelled at the group of chiefs near where I was, and the uproar became general in the house, as all had taken up the quarrel on one side or the other. The interpreter touched me on the shoulder, and said "Come;" and we made our escape outside through a small doorway that was fortunately close to us.

Though fairly clear of this savage group I was anxious to see the end of the affair, so remained for a little, at a respectful distance, to watch them. The noise shortly ceased in the house, and they all, both men and chiefs, issued forth. Several were hurt by

blows of clubs, and were bleeding. Hatta, the chief cause of the quarrel, was carried out in a dying state, being mortally wounded in the chest with a spear. Wowma accidently got a knock on the forehead, and had only one eye to see with, the other being swelled up. Hundreds of people were now assembled about the council-house, and all appeared to be savagely excited.

There was a small mound of sand in front of the house, on this my friend Wowma mounted, and addressed the crowds that were attracted to the spot for some time, and evidently with effect, as the angry feelings of the various parties began to subside, and, finally, the clubs and spears that were held up threateningly by the warriors were lowered in peace. Shortly after Hatta breathed his last; and I was told by the native with me that his accidental death was not regretted by any of the chiefs, as he was the sole disturber among them, and, from all accounts, the most treacherous man on the island, having more than once laid plans by which boats' crews from ships were cut off.

All differences were now at an end, but it was absolutely necessary, for honour sake to appease the warriors of Hatta, and give them compensation for his death. This was soon effected by the party who

killed him, presenting them with—what do you think? Why nothing more than six fighting-cocks! Although I dare not laugh in the presence of the council, yet I could now as I was clear of them, and did so in the most unequivocal manner, when I beheld and understood the nature of the peace-offering as compensation for the chief's life! They rolled Hatta's body up in a mat, put their game-cocks carefully up in small bag-nets, and marched off in the direction of their village, with their newly acquired birds and the corpse of their chief!

After this grand council, however, matters were arranged. There was peace between the chiefs and towns of the island, which I took advantage of, and visited them all, sleeping occasionally in each of them as night would put an end to my rambles. On several of the men I observed a necklace, which appeared to be the supreme emblem of barbarism. It was formed by stringing together small human bones (those of the feet and hands), which were quite polished; a hole drilled through their ends for the string to pass through, and they hung down, making a clatter when the wearer of it moved his body. Other bones of the human body I also observed in many of their houses, which, upon inquiry, confirmed me in my sus-

picion of the sad fact that these men were cannibals. In Utiroo they denied it; but in the distant towns I visited they did not at all conceal the matter, but qualified the act by saying it was only the bodies of those who came to make war with them from the neighbouring islands, or strangers that treated them ill.

They appeared to be very expert fishermen, and caught the fish which seemed chiefly to form their diet on the edges of the reefs and sand-banks that surrounded their island. I did not observe anywhere any trace of idols or images of any kind. There appeared to be no worship or adoration of any thing in particular, neither had they any definite idea of an hereafter; at least such was the conclusion I came to from the limited means of interpretation I had. Indeed, the Sandwich Islander who was with me seemed to be as perfect a savage as any of them.

The chiefs and high people among them, who can afford it, keep as many wives as they please; and there are some men so poor, that they cannot have any; however, licentiousness and treachery are the prominent features in the character of these savages, and it is deeply to be regretted that the periodical visits of whale ships and others encourage gross immorality on the one hand, whilst on the other, by

the commission of outrageous acts, they stimulate these heathens to treacherous revenge.

In asking questions, I could not get a direct answer as to what ships lately called, or what occurred previous to our visit. All was evasion; but there appeared to be traces of acts of retaliation on their towns, some of which had been nearly reduced to ashes; and I was told by my interpreter that some ship, a short time before our arrival, had one of their men killed on shore, and, in revenge, landed in force and set fire to the town. The blaze must have been extensive, as the cocoa-nut trees near it were leafless and scorched. I have no doubt of its being one of the many acts committed in the Pacific Ocean that are never mentioned at home; and I was not at all surprised to find a Sandwich Islander here, left by a ship that required his services no longer.

It is a concealed though constant practice with ships trading and cruising in the Pacific Ocean to keep up their full complement of men by coaxing a native from any of the islands, and, after taking months of hard labour out of him, land him, not on his own island, as he expected, but anywhere that suits the convenience of the captain of the vessel. It is a cruel practice to take a native, who confides him-

self to a ship, away from his home and make no exertion ever to return him to it again.

Well, I went through nearly all this island and saw all that was curious in it; and as I was returning towards Utiroo, where the vessel lay, when within four miles of it, at a small village where we rested, a band of armed natives surrounded us, first took the straw hat off my head, then began pulling at my shirt sleeves. This I resisted at first, and a loud and vehement conversation ensued between my guide and the ringleader of the party. I looked at the interpreter. He seemed to shake with either rage or fear. He told me they must have my clothes, or they would kill us both. I was yet a long way from either friendly natives or the schooner whose protection I should get, and I found myself in what is strangely termed "a fix," so I had to make the best of it.

I did not relish the idea of marching along under a burning sun stark naked, so they were made to understand I would give them my hat, shirt, and trowsers, which they seemed to covet so much, for one of their mats and cap. The chief of the gang instantly took off his fish-skin cap and war-mat and pitched them at me. I took off as quickly my garments and politely handed them to him, amidst peals of laughter from his rascally-looking followers. I then put the

cap on my head: the mat covered my person sufficiently, and I walked on glad to get rid of them so safely, though metamorphosed so completely, that my friends in Utiroo, and particularly the half-dozen of wives allotted to me, did not at first recognise me.

It was late in the evening when I arrived at my young friend Hoonoo's house, so I rested there for the night, and early next morning (Kingmill Islander as I appeared) I jumped into a canoe and went on board the schooner, where I was welcomed by the uproarious laughter of the officers and crew. However, it was no wonder, as my native costume gave me rather a remarkable look; and Captain Trainer, in a sly manner, after surveying me from head to foot, remarked, "You have a hard weather look." "Why," said I, "I may have; but I only encountered one squall though, that carried away my clothes."

However, though I was well bantered on my arrival on board, yet the kindness of the captain and officers did not cause me to regret leaving an island the savage inhabitants of which I felt so disgusted with. During the day several canoes came off with my friends for the presents I had promised to them, with which they seemed satisfied. The old chief, Wowma, in consequence of the blow he received during the row that occurred at the council-house,

could not come off for the present. Captain Trainer attended for him, however. They were sent in charge of his young friend Hoonoo. The Sandwich Islander, who served us essentially as an interpreter, entreated to be taken with us, in hopes of either being landed at some place more agreeable to him, or chance meeting with some vessel bound to his own islands. The captain, good-naturedly and without hesitation, granted his request.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE BOAT'S CREW ON SHORE ATTACKED BY NATIVES. — THEIR ESCAPE. — TREACHERY OF THE ISLANDERS. — DARING ATTACK ON THE VESSEL. — BOLD ATTEMPT OF THE NATIVES TO BOARD THE HOUND. — THEIR REPULSE. — WE SAIL FROM TAPUTONEA OR DRUMMOND'S ISLAND. — DEEP-SEA BURIAL. — DISPOSAL OF THE EFFECTS OF THE DEAD. — AN ADECDOTE. — MIXTURE OF MELANCHOLY AND SUPERSTITION. — A LUDICROUS SCENE. — CAUSE OF IT.

THERE was some firewood collected on the beach which had yet to be got off, as we were in actual want of it. The natives were offered some trifling presents to bring it to the schooner, but acted so slowly that the captain got out of patience, and despatched his boat with four men and the interpreter to effect the desired object, gave them every caution not to mix with the natives, but work quick, and get off the wood at once; and if there should be any attempt to attack them on the part of the natives, to run to the water's edge and the guns of the schooner would cover them.

I may here remark, that it is a usual plan with almost all the islanders in the Pacific, who are treacherously disposed, to obtain first as much as they can by fair trade, and if the suspicions of the captain of any vessel trading with them should be lulled, so as to throw him off his guard by this apparent honesty and safety, to take advantage of such a state of things, and either cut off a boat's crew, or attempt to board and plunder the ship, if possible.

Trainer knew these people well, had no confidence whatever in any of them; though he seemed to take matters easy enough, he was well prepared for any surprise that might be attempted, and he was doubly particular in his means of defence, as the interpreter informed him that the natives (Wowma among the rest) were laying plans to board the schooner, thinking, as she was small, the capture of her would be an easy matter. Two boats' load of the firewood was got off, and the boat sent for the third and last. The wood was about forty yards from the beach and had to be carried down by the men to the boat. A number of canoes were rapidly shoved into the water and filled with men. This was the critical time, and we all kept ready, and an anxious watch on the boat.

In a few minutes the four men on shore were observed to run with all their might down to the water's edge, followed by a crowd of armed natives. They had scarcely time to get into the boat and push her off from the beach when the natives were close on and throwing a number of spears at them, one of which took effect on one of the men. However, the remaining three got her off into deep water. The interpreter, who could not get into the boat, stole into the water at another point, unperceived by the natives, and swam off. They were all taken quickly on board, but there was no time to hoist the boat up, as the canoes, filled with armed men, were fast approaching.

The seaman who was wounded in the boat died in a few minutes after reaching the deck: the spear had passed right through his chest. The men were all enraged at the loss of an excellent man and an esteemed messmate, were burning for revenge, and were waiting, with impatient eagerness, for the orders to slap at them. Trainer was at the gangway, with his eye on the advancing fleet of canoes; I was with him. We were well prepared. The short carronades were the most useful articles on the present occasion, and were loaded with grape. The crew were also armed.

"Well," said the captain, "I have been here several times, always treated them fairly and kindly, and now, without cause, they have killed one of our best men, and want to take my vessel and murder us all. They shall catch it!" Thus spoke a really humane man, but he was irritated beyond all patience by the treachery of the natives and loss of his man. "Now, my lads, are you ready?" "Ay, ay, Sir!" "Remember, if we let these savages board us, not a man will be alive in ten minutes!" "Never fear, Sir. We'll pay them!" On the canoes came; they separated into two divisions, one advancing to the bows, the other towards the stern.

Trainer keenly eyed them, whilst he made frequent exclamations, such as "Well, you want the schooner, I suppose?" &c. The natives in the canoes were yelling and screaming loudly enough, and brandishing their spears with as threatening an aspect as they could make, seemingly with the intention or for the purpose of cowing us. They approached within twenty yards, when the captain ordered the guns at the bow to be pointed fair for the batch of canoes ahead, while he arranged for those approaching the stern. "Are you ready, men, fore and aft?" "Ay, ay, Sir." "Let go, then." The two carronades discharged their fatal showers of grape, and, before

the smoke had rightly cleared away, they were loaded and again fired amongst the savages. "Load again, my lads," said the captain.

There was scarcely any wind, and the smoke, which hung low on the water, was a few minutes in clearing away. The screaming of the wounded people was appalling. Some canoes were sunk or capsized, and numbers of natives were swimming towards the shore. Nevertheless, there were many of them yet that kept their ground, and had the reckless daring to make another bold push for the vessel's side. "Fire," said the captain again, and another volley of grape flew amongst them. This discharge had not the great effect of the former ones, as the canoes were closer, and the contents of the guns had not distance enough to scatter. The savages seemed to comprehend this, and in another moment were clinging to the schooner's sides, endeavouring to board; but the rapid use of muskets and pistols ultimately drove them away in indescribable confusion, with, I am sorry to say, considerable loss.

The whole affair was caused by the natural treachery of the natives. The part we played was unavoidable: in fact, our lives were at stake, and there was only one unnecessary shot fired after the final retreat of the natives. The men who had charge

of the bow gun loaded it again unperceived by the captain, and, before they could be stopped, fired it after the savages, who were making for the shore. This parting shot was, as they said, to revenge Tom Staples, the seaman who was speared. There was no one on board the schooner hurt during the affray, but the carpenter, whose arm was broken by the blow of a heavy club, wielded by a huge savage who was endeavouring to board.

In fact, we were very critically situated, as there were upwards of a hundred stout natives clinging to the vessel's sides and nettings, striving boldly to get in upon us. The whole affair, from the time the boat's crew were attacked on shore, until the savages were driven from about the schooner, only lasted about twenty minutes, and would never have occurred if there had been wind enough to take the vessel out from her anchorage. The rapidity with which the natives came off and attacked prevented us even trying to tow her out, so that the calmness of the weather and their sudden treachery compelled Captain Trainer to defend his own vessel and the lives of those on board her.

It was late in the afternoon before we were favoured with sufficient wind to get under weigh with safety; and every one of us felt greatly relieved

when the schooner's sails were filled with the breeze and moving away out from our disagreeable position. Before midnight we had made a good offing to the westward of the island and hove to. The following day we buried the body of poor Staples with all the respect in our power to afford his remains.

The ceremony of burial at sea is known to all sea-going people; but, as there are many on land not familiar with its peculiarity, I will now, in a few words, describe it. Generally, in an hour or two, if circumstances permit it, the body of the deceased is conveyed on deck and deposited in the waist or centre of the vessel at the lee side. Either the hammock of the dead man, or canvass of the stoutest description, is procured, and either folded or cut so that it may fit the body. This is spread on the deck, and the deceased is laid on it. It is sewed by two or three of the men tightly over the body, so that, when done, it has the appearance of a covered Egyptian mummy. Inside this sack-like covering, and at the feet of the man, are laid or incased two or three heavy shot, or, in vessels where they have no shot, heavy pieces of iron, bricks, or stones.

This precaution is taken in order that the body, on entering the water, may at once sink swiftly and deep, that the ferocious shark may not tear it until

it decays. The body thus prepared for burial is placed upon one of the hatches, or a wide plank, one end of which is pointed overboard at the gangway, the other resting on any thing that may raise it on a level. The usual hour for burial at sea is four o'clock in the afternoon. The colours are hoisted half-mast high some time previously, and, during the ceremony, the ship is laid to, with the main yards aback, so as to be stationary.

The men are assembled near the corpse. In large ships of war, where there is a chaplain on board, he, of course, reads the service; but in smaller and merchant vessels, where there is none, the service is respectfully read by any of the officers that volunteer to do so. The only difference in performing the service at sea from that in use on land is in the words, when the body slides into the water, "We therefore commit his body to the deep, in sure and certain hope of the resurrection to eternal life," &c. The end of the plank that is in board is then elevated considerably, and the body slides off feet foremost down into the depth of the water. The service is then read to its end, the flag hauled down, the yards braced up, the sails filled again with the breeze, and the vessel speeds her way on her voyage.

The chest, boxes, &c. belonging to the buried

man, whether he be officer or common seaman, is then brought up, and, in the presence of a few, inspected; an inventory is taken; the articles, such as clothing, hammocks, bed-clothes, &c. are sold by auction to the crew, and any money or other valuable property, papers, &c., that the deceased may have possessed, are sealed up, directed for his friends, and, in charge of the captain, to be delivered when the vessel arrives home.

Those who, for the first time, witness a deep-sea burial, receive a peculiar impression of the thrilling solemnity of the scene. The dead body on the plank that is to launch it overboard; the chaplain or officer reading the service; the group of hardy, stern, and weather-beaten seamen, cap in hand, standing around with respectful bearing and awe-struck countenances as the word of God falls on their ear; the vessel stationary; and no noise save the occasional splash of the sea against the ship's sides, altogether with the isolated position of the crew away far from the rest of mankind, combine to create a new, I may say, a mysterious feeling in the mind of a looker-on.

This painful duty, which occasionally devolves on the crew of a ship on distant voyages, is generally conducted with rigid seriousness and strict decorum. I have never witnessed the solemnity of the occasion

disturbed but in one instance, and I will here relate it for the edification of the reader.

Some time prior to the date of the present occurrences, I was in a ship that was cruising on the east coast of the Islands of New Zealand; occasionally we would run in to an anchorage to get fresh supplies of hogs, vegetables, and water. While at the Bay of Islands, we took on board, as passenger, a gentleman who was acting in the capacity of agent for a house in Sidney, to collect a cargo of flax at New Zealand, intending to land him at a station in Cook's Straits. He was in a precarious state of health, in fact, in decline; and, contrary to our advice, he took advantage of our ship to gain his desired passage.

Shortly after leaving harbour, we encountered severe gales of wind, with lightning, thunder, and heavy rains, which obliged us, for safety sake, to haul off the land, and keep a good offing, until the violence of the squalls abated; about ten days after leaving the Bay of Islands, at night, and during one of those fearful gusts of wind, our passenger died, and as the men said, who were watching over him, cursing and blaspheming awfully. He was a man of naturally ugly and forbidding aspect, he did not for a moment of the time he was on board our vessel

prepossess any one in his favour: in plain terms, the men, one and all, pronounced him "not good;" and they were glad to get rid of him in any way.

The following day he was buried in the usual way, at the time the gale was heavy, and the ship was hove too to ride it out. The dead body was placed on a deal board that had been ripped off a bulk head. This was used instead of one of the hatches that were all in their places, and secured to prevent the sea (which occasionally, during the gale, broke over the deck) from penetrating into the vessel. At the words, "We commit his body to the deep," &c. a huge passing wave broke boiling around the ship, and the heavy lee-lurch that followed threw down most of the men, and the body of our defunct passenger amongst them. As soon as they could stand on the slippery deck, they did, each casting strange looks at the other, whilst some gave audible vent to sundry marine maledictions on the dead body which lay on the deck.

The drollery of the occurrence destroyed the seriousness of the scene, and the captain, who read the service, had to turn his face away and close the book for a moment. "Right him again." "Ay, ay, Sir,"—and the body was on the plank. Again the book was opened, another heavy swell burst in

upon us amidship, and washed both the living and the dead across the deck to the other side, the fore part of the ship reared up out of its bed of foam, and the men got up dripping out of the body of water that we had shipped.

Our old boatswain, M'Coy, who had been sailing with the captain for years, and a privileged man on board, came up to where we were standing, and addressed the skipper with "I beg pardon, Sir, but he's not right, he won't start off from the gangway; suppose we drop him over the stern?" The man had a determined seriousness in his look and tone that would force a smile from any one; however, the captain told him to "begone for an old fool, and rig the plank again." The men, one and all, with praiseworthy alacrity, placed the body once more on the board, as the necessary part of the service had been read, they were ordered to "launch."

The board was elevated, yet the body remained without sliding off. "Higher yet." "Higher it is, Sir." Several of the men now got superstitiously impatient, and shouted to those who supported the board to "heave;" and heave they did; for the body was jerked some distance away from the ship's side, performing a summerset before it made its final

plunge. On looking at the surface of the plank we found there was a projecting large nail, which stuck in the canvass, and consequently prevented the body from gliding off as usual. For decency's sake the service was concluded, and, with the exception of a note in the log-book of the man's death and burial, there was no other trace of his ever having existed.

This, I say, is the only time I have ever witnessed any thing like levity or irregularity during the burial ceremony at sea. Seamen are very superstitious, and during gales of wind at sea those ideas are wrought upon, particularly when there is a dead body on board. This feeling, with the heavy sea and deep pitching of the ship, was the cause of the awkwardness that occurred in the instance I have related.

CHAPTER XXIII.

APAMAMO, OR SIMPSON'S ISLAND. — SOME ACCOUNT OF IT. — KURIA. — GREAT POPULATION. — AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATIVES. — THEIR COCK-FIGHTING. — GRADES OF RANK AMONGST THEM. — THEIR RESPECTIVE PRIVILEGES. — HOW A CHIEF MANAGES A NUMBER OF WIVES. — THE ISLAND OF TARUTARII. — WHITE MEN LIVING WITH NATIVES. — THE ISLAND CALLED MANKII, AGREEABLE SAVAGES. — GENERAL ACCOUNT OF AND REMARKS ON THE KINGSMILL ISLAND GROUP.

AFTER the burial of the seaman Staples, the schooner was put about, and we stood in for the Islands of the group to the eastward of us, to renew our trading purposes, Trainer being nothing daunted by the attack on us at Drummond's Island; in fact, with the exception of the loss of his man, not caring one fig about it. The island called by the natives Apamamo, or, as the charts have it, Simpson's Island, was visited; here, on one end of it, there were three temporary sheds erected, and a few people engaged in the searching for, and curing and drying beche-de-mar, a liberal supply of which we obtained from them in trade for some trifling articles

of small value. This island is low, indeed only a few feet above the surface of the water, partially surrounded by a reef, and forming a kind of lagoon inside. It is seven or eight miles long, about four wide, and lying in 27′ 20″ N. and 173° 50′ east longitude. The natives who were then on the island obtained their fresh water by digging several feet deep about thirty yards from the water's edge.

The next island visited of this group was called by the natives Kuria, situated in 14′ 28″ N. and 173° 25′ E. It is only about six miles long, by from two to three wide. There are a great number of inhabitants living on it. The Sandwich islander we took off Drummond's Island acted as interpreter, and, in consequence of the report he gave me of the friendship of the natives, I paid them a visit on shore of three days. These people did not receive us as entire new-comers. They had been frequently visited by the English whale-ships cruizing about the group. They did not appear to have benefited much by the frequent calls of these ships at their island, as their morals were in a most deplorable state, and disease had been recklessly introduced amongst them, of which they complained bitterly.

Having soon found out from our interpreter the nature of my profession they were pressingly urgent

on me to remain for a time with them. From glaring marks and tokens which I saw in and about some of their houses, I must pronounce them to be cannibals. On this island there is a vast quantity of poultry. Some idea may be formed of their love for cock-fighting when I state that we got in exchange four dozen of good-sized fowls for a spirited looking game-cock that we had on board since we left the coast of America. Common clay tobacco-pipes were also in demand, always getting six fowls for one. Pieces of iron-hoop also were eagerly taken. They made small adzes of them.

The females were in general good-looking, but in a state of comparative slavery to the men, as they had to do most of the drudgery. The chiefs or great men lived, as such, in idleness and the luxury that the island afforded them, and having as many wives as they wished or could keep. A commoner or poor man, I understood, was obliged to live without a wife for years. An expert fisherman ranked high; indeed, their profession or calling was a highly respectable one here, as they seemed to enjoy, to a considerable extent, the privilege that rank conferred on them, in having a houseful of wives.

You may feel a curiosity to know if all these wives lived on friendly terms with each other. All

I can say is, they seemed to live in harmony, and I was told they generally did so; and further, that if there was any disagreement or wrangling amongst them, their lord and (literally) master treated them much in the same manner that we are informed, in the child's book, a certain antiquated dame treated her refractory children, viz.,

"Whipp'd them all round, and sent them to bed."

There did not appear to be much of a warlike propensity about these people; and, through the agency of the interpreter, I found out that their chief quarrelling was about their women, or the possession of them. Yet they take advantage of other natives from the neighbouring islands, who might be driven in their canoes or land on their island; also of strangers from vessels that casually visited them, if they were unguarded in their acts or person: these were killed and eaten by the chiefs.

The whale-ships seem to have wonderfully escaped affrays at these islands. Indeed, they appear to be the favourites, as the fair sex are generally allowed to go on board in any number they please, and they give them iron-hoops, whales' teeth, beads, &c. which please them much. However, some misunderstand-

ing and fighting has occurred, and no statement of the occurrences mentioned or made public, in consequence of the ships' crews being in fault; in fact, generally the aggressors.

The island termed Tarutarii was next visited. It lies in 3° 6′ north latitude, and 172° 45′ east longitude; it is about thirteen miles long, and thickly covered over with cocoa-nut, pandanus trees, &c. A good deal of low bushes also grow thickly about, so as to impede a direct route through it. The most annoying thing on this island is the musquito: they are in clouds, and employed themselves busily in buzzing about and biting me, night and day, during my short sojourn on shore.

There were three white men residing on this island, but I could not see them: the natives told us they had gone over to another small island, near this, on a visit. This we did not believe; and, on leaving the island, our interpreter found out they were there, but under concealment as long as we remained. In all probability they were some of those pests that not unfrequently make their way to various islands in the Pacific, the runaway Australian convict, and do not choose to appear lest they may be recognised and recaptured.

After leaving this place we hove-to off a small

island called by the natives Mankii. It is very narrow, and not more than five or six miles long. I was a few hours on shore, and found the natives to be numerous, obliging, and all apparently full of fun and frolic. Several other islands of this group were visited by the Hound, and a considerable quantity of sandal-wood, beche-de-mar, &c. collected; but, as no further incident occurred with the natives worth mentioning, I will close this notice with a few general remarks.

The Kingsmill group of islands are in number (I believe) fourteen, dotting the ocean from 4° north to 6° south latitude, the centre of the group being nearly on the equator, and from 172° to 178° east longitude. Some of the smaller islands are bare enough looking, with only scanty groups of cocoa-nut and pandanus trees; whilst others are densely covered with thick groves and even much underbrush, which present a very inviting aspect when near to them. Occasional coral reefs defend the shores from the swell of the sea, and some have considerable lagoons inside them, where boats can enter, or even a small vessel lie safe enough, as far as regards her anchorage. However, few will be found who will be so imprudent as to trust boat or vessel of any size into these lagoons, where they

would only be surrounded by swarms of treacherous natives.

The population of these islands must be very great. From the numbers I saw, and making a rough calculation of the rest, I am inclined to think there must be at least thirty or forty thousand persons in this group. In complexion they are not much darker than the natives of Tahiti, Marquesas, &c. Their persons are comely and by no means of a disagreeable aspect, yet they are very treacherous, taking every advantage of strangers who may be cast into their power. This is the case with ships, boats, &c., but not with individuals who have nothing to lose.

Men from whaling and trading vessels frequently desert here, some remain voluntarily, but all are received cordially and treated in the most kind manner. It is astonishing with what rapidity man will forsake civilisation, and dive into the depths of barbarism; most white men in those islands and others I have seen, put on the character of the savage at once, enjoy their ceremonies, amusements, &c., generally taking active parts in their disputes and wars, and, what is still worse, put the islanders up to all kinds of mischief against strange vessels.

I have been confidently informed, that they have organised the natives in attacking and destroying

ships, and cutting off boats; vessels have been taken at these islands, and never after heard of, care being taken to conceal the occurrence by burning the ship after the plunder has been effected. On the appearance of a ship of war, or any armed vessel, these gentry conceal themselves, natives only are seen, who all look honest enough in countenance, yet are dark enough at heart, and it is not to be wondered at, when you take into consideration they superstitiously believe that all ships that are placed in their power are sent to them specially from their gods.

In the groves of trees, evidently intended for concealment, I saw portions of vessels that had been burned with the mark of former fire on it. It was impossible to obtain any particulars about it, as the people persisted in saying that it was washed up on the beach by the sea; and when I exhibited incredulous signs, and pointed to the old marks of fire, they only laughed at me with a keen look, as much as to say, "you have found us out;" however, taking all matters into consideration, making due allowance for heathen propensities, and the natural capabilities of these natives, it is to be hoped that Christianity will extend it's protecting arm to them, and rescue the thousands that inhabit this group from the grasp of heathenism.

CHAPTER XXIV.

SAIL WESTERLY. — THE SEA. — NEW IRELAND. — APPEARANCE OF THE LAND FROM THE SHIP. — RUNNING ALONG SHORE. — DISCOVER A BAY AND COME TO AN ANCHOR. — NATIVES COME OFF TO THE HOUND. — A DESCRIPTION OF THEM. — THE KING COMES OFF. — HIS APPEARANCE AND ORNAMENTS. — THE INTERPRETER, THOMAS MANNERS. — HIS HISTORY, PRESENT COSTUME AND HIGH RANK. — BOOLOOMA AND MANNERS DINE WITH US. — AN AMUSING SCENE.

It was Captain Trainer's intention, on leaving the Kingsmill Island, to steer southerly for the Feejees, where he thought he might pick up some beche-de-mar, &c.; however, "on overhauling his knowledge-box," (as he called his head,) he altered his mind, and the Hound was running away under all sail, steering west. The weather was extremely fine, the water smooth, but rippled occasionally with strong currents; here and there patches of sea-weed floating along with a few sea-fowl hovering about; for several days, large shoals of sperm whales were seen. The crew were in excellent health, and, what is not

always the case, they liked their captain and officers, and were contented in the schooner.

The intimacy and friendship that existed between Trainer and myself added much to the pleasure of our cruise. Sometimes the wind would die away and leave us becalmed, again, baffling and squally. However, after a fair run of thirteen days, we were close in with the easternmost part of New Ireland. The charts of this part of the ocean that were on board were very defective, indeed of comparative little use. However, this deficiency did not frustrate any designs of our worthy captain, who said he could, with any kind of fair breezes (considering the Hound's light draught of water), run close in and poke out a berth for himself.

We were now favoured with fresh easterly breezes, the atmosphere being very clear. The view, as far as could be seen by naked eye or telescopes, was distinct and clear. The land in the interior seemed very high, mountain after mountain, of every shape and form, towering over each other; the deep gorges and hill sides densely wooded; the shore all along high, bold, and rocky; a magnificent surf dashing up against the most prominent bluffs; the silvery path of many a mountain torrent was distinctly visible as it quivered down through the ravines, and threw its broad sheet

of water over some high cliff into the sea. There was a heavy swell heaving in upon the land, that caused us to keep a respectful distance from this frowning iron-bound shore. However, we steered along sufficiently close to examine minutely the rocky barrier and have an eye out for any cut or opening that would indicate bay or river.

There were two men stationed on the fore-topsail yard-arm, to look out a-head for any sunken rocks that might be in the way. Using these precautions, we skimmed along the surface at the rate of seven or eight knots. Our course along the land was about N. W. There appeared to be almost every where deep water close in shore. At sunset we came up with a high bluff of land faced with perpendicular rocks, forming a promontory and stretching out into the sea a good way. On rounding this head, a deep bay, receding far inland, opened to our view. The north-western boundary or mouth of it appeared also to be bold and rocky; the entrance about two miles wide. It was too late in the day to steer into it, so the vessel was put about, and we stood off and on during the night.

As soon as the sun rose the following day, we took advantage of the stiff breeze that favoured us, and steered right into the bay. After passing the head-

lands the wind veered about, and came down upon us off the land in occasional strong puffs, rendering it necessary to stand by and let go our halliards and shorten sail several times. When fairly in the bay, the smell of vegetable matter off the land was agreeable. The bay was about two miles deep, and appeared to be very clear of rocks or impediments of any kind, so that the navigation of it was safe, only observing to give a good berth to what we saw above water. In consequence of the land breezes, we had to tack in. However, in the smooth water of the bay the schooner performed her part in fine style.

Whilst working up the bay, the usual arrangements were completed in putting the schooner in an effective state for defence in case of an attack from the natives. When about two thirds up the bay, in tacking over to the western side of it and towards the foot of a large wide valley that sloped gently down to the beach, the water suddenly shoaled, and, having ascertained the nature of the ground with the hand-lead, we came to an anchor in ten fathoms, about a cable's length from the beach.

In about a quarter of an hour afterwards great numbers of natives were assembling on the beach and rocks. Several canoes were launched filled with men paddling towards us, and, as they came alongside and

around the vessel, the noise and uproar was very great; but there was no demonstration of a hostile feeling, neither had they clubs, spears, or other war-like weapons with them. They appeared to scan the vessel closely, paddle round and round her, chattering and laughing loudly all the time. Some of them tried to get inboard, but, when prevented by the sailors, were heartily laughed at by their friends.

There was nothing in their canoes to trade for, neither did there appear to be any chief amongst them, as they were all dressed alike, that is, nearly naked: nothing on them save a small cloth or piece of matting round the waist, and many not even that. The colour of their skins perfectly black, the hair of the head woolly and naturally black, but, with most of them, artificially white with a quantity of chalk rubbed into it; but the form and features were very fine, and no similarity whatever to the negro but the colour of the skin. Their language sounded differently from any of the islanders I had seen further to the eastward; in fact, we could not understand a word of it. However, we soon found out how to make ourselves understood by signs, and the business of the day was opened by the captain holding up a piece of red cloth and some trinkets, &c. to their view, pointing to himself, and giving them to know that

these presents were for a chief or great man, and motioned some of them away to bring him.

A consultation was held for a few minutes, which seemed to end in nothing. However, two canoes were about starting off to the shore, when they all stood up, raised a shout, and pointed in the direction of the beach, where a small canoe, having an outrigger, like the rest, with two men in it, were seen approaching. As they came nearer, the fleet of canoes that hovered about us opened out, affording this canoe a clear passage to our vessel's side. "Ho, ho!" said our captain, "we have somebody coming now;" and it certainly turned out so, for one of the party was no less a personage than the king or head chief of all the country near this bay.

He was a fine, tall, middle-aged man, of most commanding appearance, black as a coal. Some of his front teeth were stained red, and round his wrists, ankles, and neck, strings of fancifully formed bone and shell ornaments were dangling. His features were truly noble; but there was no covering on his person except a small mat of fine texture, fancifully adorned with red feathers, round his loins. His companion was nothing more nor less than a white man who had turned native and had resided many years on this island. However, he had the decency to

cover his naked body with a large ornamented mat before he came alongside; and I must say we felt relieved and agreeably surprised when we heard him say, "A rope for the canoe!" in plain English; so we obtained now what we wanted, an interpreter. On first coming on the deck, he said, "Keep the natives off: allow no one to get inboard but the king and me."

Trainer invited the king and him down to the cabin, where a long conversation ensued as to what might be obtained here and the description of trade necessary to give the natives. On coming on deck, our now hired interpreter spoke to the natives in the canoes, telling them what to do, what to bring off, and what they would get if they stirred themselves. Most of them then paddled away to the shore, leaving the king on board. There was, for a while, comparative silence about the vessel, so we may as well take advantage of it to say a word about our interpreter.

Thomas Manners (such was his name) was a native of London, England, had been a sailor a great part of his life, with the exception of the ten years he had been living with the natives of New Ireland. He said he was tired of a sea-going life. He served last on board an English whale-ship, which landed him

here at his own request. He had no reason to regret it, as he had no friends alive anywhere else, and those people were extremely kind to him; in fact, he ranked high, and had nearly as much authority over the natives as the king had. He was a middle-sized man, of stout, athletic make, and his eye and aspect generally was bold and determined. His long dark hair, which would hang down on his shoulders, was coiled up on the top of his head and made fast there by a rude kind of tortoiseshell comb. His beard was long and rested on his chest.

The fine matting he wore was hanging from his shoulders, after the manner of a cloak or mantle; encircling his neck was a fine cord formed by the platting or twisting together of cocoa-nut fibre; from it was suspended a curiously carved shell ornament as large as an oyster. This was his badge of rank, presented to him by the sable monarch now on board. It conferred on him, I may say, absolute authority over the lower class of natives. His expression of face was very open and candid to us, and, to all appearance, we might put confidence in him, which we did to a certain extent, and found him worthy of it. His manner was extremely independent, and haughty enough for any chief. However, this was probably a habit acquired by so long a residence on this island,

and exercising so much authority over a people whom he considered so much his inferiors, and who looked upon him as a god. To most of them he was rude and tyrannical; but he said, in explanation to us, that nothing else would answer his ends; besides, the adoption of such a course pleased Boolooma, the king, so highly, that he considered him worthy of high rank, and presented him with four wives, one of them his own daughter, the other three those of chiefs.

Not the least amusing scenes took place between our interpreter and the king during dinner in the cabin. The king preferred a seat on the deck, the interpreter was sitting at the table like ourselves, and in his attentions to the wants or wishes of Boolooma, would take a piece of bread, or a large lump of beef or pork, and heave it at his majesty, who was certain of catching those missiles in the most expert manner and with evident pleasure, not thinking a moment of the (as it seemed to us) unmannerly manner by which Manners conveyed the desired morsels to him. The appetite of this monarch was excellent; indeed, it required the assiduous attentions, for some time, of our interpreter to satisfy it; but, with some perseverance, much good-humour, and true comicality of action, the desired end was attained to his majesty's perfect satisfaction.

Throughout the first day a great many canoes passed to and from the schooner. Their black and woolly-headed crews kept up an incessant confusion of sounds that were any thing but harmonious. We were not visited by any of the women on our arrival, as is usual with the islanders further to the eastward. However, this was caused in a great measure by our captain requesting Boolooma to issue orders to prevent their coming off, as they would only idle the sailors, whose continued services were required in guarding the vessel from surprise, and doing repairs that could not be properly accomplished if the schooner was rolling about in a sea way.

CHAPTER XXV.

I RESOLVE TO GO ON SHORE. — THE KING'S SON ROWNAA. — AN ACCOUNT OF HIS PERSON. — BOOLOOMA TABOOES MY PERSON AND GUN. — CURIOUS CEREMONY. — LAND AMONGST THE NATIVES. — ANNOYANCE FROM THE CROWDS OF SAVAGES. — ROWNAA'S INTERFERENCE. — HIS COMICALITY OF ACTION. — ARRIVE AT THE TOWN. — THE GRAND COUNCIL HOUSE. — ROWNAA LEAVES ME IN IT. — HIS RETURN WITH REFRESHMENTS. — NATIVE FOOD. — THEIR METHOD AT MEALS. — ROWNAA'S APPETITE. — HIS IDEAS OF HOSPITALITY. — HIS WARRIORS.

In consequence of a long conversation with our interpreter Captain Trainer considered it would only be running uncalled for risk to allow any of the crew on shore. Neither did he intend landing himself; so many natives had seen him, and arrived at the knowledge that he was the captain, — a chief, — they might be tempted to detain him until we should hand over a considerable ransom. So he was content to amuse himself and part of his crew occasionally in boating and fishing excursions about the bay, taking care to keep in view of the vessel all the

time. With me the case was different; I was not one of the crew, nor in any other capacity than that of a passenger, so was free to act as I pleased; and, after a talk over the matter with my friend Trainer, as to the risk to be incurred, I resolved to land under the friendship and protection of the king's son Rownaa.

This grandee was in colour as black as his father. The hair of his head was not so carefully combed out, but matted, and stood out in points about ten or twelve inches long from his scalp, something after the manner of the long quills from the skin of an enraged porcupine; it was, like all the rest of the warriors here, powdered with chalk or lime. He appeared to be about five or six and twenty years old, stoutly made, and of the middle height. He had also a badge of rank made of pearl oyster-shell suspended from his neck and glistening on his black naked chest. Two of his front teeth were dyed black, and two more adjoining red. A mere apology for a covering encircled his loins. In his hand he bore a short, heavy, partially carved paddle, which had three or four large tufts of human hair dangling from it. He had an expressive countenance, and was exceedingly significant in signs, which, with a little practice, enabled me to understand him tolerably

well. This, then, may suffice to convey to you some faint idea of the ferocious-looking gentleman under whose shield of friendship I intrusted myself amongst a set of black barbarians.

I mention the word "black," as I confess people of that colour have always created feelings in me of a more mysterious kind than those of a less palpable complexion. The next item under consideration was whether I should go on shore armed or not, as at some islands, the Fegees, &c. for instance, a man might get knocked in the head for the sake of either knife or fowling-piece. I was loath to go without my gun and knife, as the handling of them gave me a feeling of confidence and security that I would not have without them, so I consulted the interpreter, who spoke to Boolooma on the subject; and I soon found that I might bring my gun, &c. with me, as all would be untouched by any one.

The tabooing, as it were, or rendering my person and property sacred from the hostile touch of any of his sable majesty's subjects, was performed in the following manner:—From the folds of cloth round his loins he extracted some cocoa-nut fibre sinnet which was stained red, and tied two pieces of it firmly round the stock of the gun; another piece encircled my neck as a necklace, having strung on it

a small plate of pearl-shell. All the time he was arranging these (to me) important matters, a continued chant, of a low gutteral kind, was kept up by his worthy son. As soon as this ceremony was over and I was, to the admiration of the spectators, pronounced "All right!" my ferocious-looking friend and I bundled into a spare canoe alongside, paddled away over the smooth water, and in due time landed amongst a crowd of natives of all ages and sexes, the most noisy, naked, and black imp-like set that I ever before looked upon.

These strange people seemed as curious to see me as I did them. The squeezing and crushing of those who were all eagerness to look at and touch me, completely impeded my progress from the beach for a while; and, although assured by Boolooma of my safety, I felt really queer when I considered my situation and looked around me on the dark-looking assemblage of savages. I got impatient at last to be so completely pressed upon that I could neither move on, or see any thing about me but the naked throng; so I touched my friend Rownaa on the shoulder and signed to him to "go ahead." He roared out something or another, pointed to the red string on me, gave a few flourishes of his princely war-paddle, kicked the juvenile portion of the crowd right and

left out of our way, and soon effected a wide passage, through which we marched, he leading the way in an erect and ludicrously dignified manner.

Frequently he would turn round, speak to the people, point to me, and walk on again: in fact, showing me off to the best advantage, as if he were some renowned showman exhibiting to the curious eyes of the spectators some great curiosity that he brought before them. I could not avoid frequently laughing at him, and my involuntary mirth would be certain to bring an echoing roar from the crowd, not unlike the rumbling of an uneasy volcano. However, after some time, we arrived at a kind of town, or rather large village, distant about two miles from the landing place.

In the centre of this town there was a cleared spot of ground of about two acres in extent, and in the middle of this there was an elevated spot thinly covered by some old palm trees. Here a low shed of extensive dimensions was erected, and two small houses, or rather huts, adjoining. The latter was the residence of the king and his family. The former was, as it were, the grand council house, where all matters of a political or civil nature connected with the tribe was discussed.

The appearance of this large shed from the outside

would lead you to imagine that it was a hog-house or dog-kennel on an extensive scale; but the absence of all noxious smells and cleanliness of the partition walls and doorway banished such an idea. In shape this shed formed a large circle. The wall, or rather the supporters of the roof, were simply the stems of small trees, with the bark stripped off, which gave them a white and clean appearance. They were about twelve inches in diameter and four feet high, firmly inserted into the ground. In the centre, and at various distances from each other, were also uprights for the support of the roof of various height, from ten to fifteen feet, all without the bark, and stained red, which gave the interior a pillared appearance and had a very pretty effect when I entered. The roof was low, the highest part of it not being more than sixteen feet from the ground, and had a bright yellow shade from the dried flag leaves with which it was thatched—I may add, ornamented. Three tall poles projected high from the centre of the roof, and on the pointed ends of each a dried human skull rested, staring grimly on the scene around.

I afterwards understood that these remnants of humanity were all that existed of three prisoners of war, who were sacrificed to Maynee, a war god, on the completion of this grand council chamber. The

floor of this house was covered all over with fine matting, which had been stained yellow with turmeric; also some bird feathers of various colours were interwoven in it, and peculiarly arranged, so as to form some kind of emblems, which were perfectly understood by the natives generally. Well, then, on this handsome mat Rownaa and I sat down; and it was a very refreshing lounge, as the cool breeze that waved to and fro the trees that were round the house made its way freely into the interior and cooled every thing.

After a while my friend made signs to me to lie down and rest. He then made his way out of the house and through the crowd, so that I was temporarily alone, and occupied the time in admiring the interior of this curious house and the scores of faces that were peeping in at me from all sides, and reflecting a little on the depth of heathenism that, as yet, hung in a heavy cloud over these people. During the absence of my friend, I was free from the annoyance of the crowd that was outside. It seemed the precincts of this council-house were sacred from intrusion except on particular occasions, and, fortunately for me, none of the people would dare to come under the roof without an invitation from my friend or the call of a war council.

But in my instance there was an exception to the general rule, and intruders did make their way in, despising all restriction; and, if they came to welcome me, I could not complain of coldness on their part, as I was beset by swarms of them (I allude to the mosquitos), buzzing and biting, requiring on my part considerable exertion, with continued gymnastic performances, to keep them off. The constant flapping of my hat and occasional kicking of either legs seemed to contribute much amusement to an old savage who was looking in at the entrance way and grinning horribly with evident delight.

After being left a couple of hours in this predicament, my worthy friend Rownaa made his appearance and entered the shed, followed, in single file, by half a dozen natives carrying in materials for a luncheon, or, as the translation of the native language emphatically terms, "something to eat," or "a feed." When the entire was deposited on the mats before us and all fairly in view, it had a very respectable appearance, and plainly told me that there was no want of the necessaries, or even luxuries of life in old Boolooma's dominions. I am not one of those whose palates are difficult to please. I have always felt plain food to be most agreeable, and a long experience has taught me to feel deeply thankful when

a sufficiency is placed before me. The only reason for particularising a meal at all is, that what I describe will serve to illustrate the indigenous productions of the island, as well as inform you of the kind of food used by the natives.

There were two kinds of fish, mullet and a flat-fish not unlike plaice, hot from the fire, after being roasted with leaves round them, and when opened looked very inviting. Roasted slices of yam, do. bread-fruit, bunches of rich ripe plantain, pulp of the young cocoa-nut beat up with sugar-cane sap into the consistence of and not unlike a custard, and three large calebashes full of the purest fresh water. Now this was a very creditable list to be placed before a stranger at "the sign of the Three Skulls" (as I entered it in my notes), in New Ireland. Neither was there any stint in the supply, as what was intended for Rownaa and I would have fully satisfied twenty men! I watched now with some interest the proceedings of my friend.

The first move he made was to seize one of the vessels containing the water, go to the doorway, fill his mouth several times, squirting it to a considerable distance from him in all directions, carefully, however, avoiding the sacred matting or posts of the house. Then he dashed some of the water repeatedly

over his hands until they were perfectly free from all particles of grease or dust. Not having any objection to so cleanly a proceeding, though curiously performed, I followed my worthy host's example. Then we seated ourselves on the mats before this pile of food and commenced an attack, the sternness of which alone could be conceived by one watching the gradual reduction of the hill of yams and fish that were in Rownaa's immediate vicinity.

He appeared as if he had eaten nothing for two or three days. Mouth continually filled, eyes distended, muscles of the jaw in constant motion, now and then rubbing down his stomach as if to make room for more, and not unfrequently making expressive signs to me to "go ahead!" The exertions he continued to make made me anxious for the poor fellow's health, and I really pitied him when I learned afterwards that the large supply of food he had used was partly owing to his ideas of hospitality, considering he had a right to set me an example, and I to follow it; but the thing was altogether impossible. I might as well think of eating up one of the pyramids in Egypt as to have swallowed a twentieth part of the mound of food that he allotted to me. After he was (literally speaking) filled, he again rinsed his mouth and hands, stretched himself in an agreeable attitude on

the mat, and began to sing in his own way. Well, thought I, you're a jolly fellow and ought to be a London Alderman! Your capabilities are undoubted!

I retired some distance from the mat on which the food was placed. This seemed to be a sufficiently expressive sign to the parties who brought it in to remove what was left, and they certainly did so with creditable dispatch, but not exactly in the manner usual amongst civilians. They hastily formed a circle round the mat, seated as natives of almost all the islands I have seen; that is, on their haunches, with the legs drawn close up and the knees generally forming a rest for the hands and arms; in fact, completely after the manner of monkeys. Having thus seated themselves with as little ceremony as possible, they busily occupied themselves in snatching up portions of the food with their hands and cramming it, with fearful rapidity, into their mouths, having occasional recourse to the calabash of water, and, with the assistance of two or three friends that were called in, the whole was effectually cleared away.

I may as well tell you that these attendants of Rownaa were neither slaves or low people, but privileged friends and tried warriors of the king's.

They were all ornamented with broad streaks of red ochre on the chest and sides, and had a curious appearance whilst discussing the viands of Rownaa's entertainment, and a very picturesque one, when earnestly conversing on some matters which I knew had reference to the ship and me, as they repeatedly pointed to me, and again in the direction of the schooner. Soon after this they all suddenly got up and went their way, leaving me and Rownaa in possession of the council house.

At this stage of the proceedings I was agreeably surprised by a visit from our interpreter, who was the bearer of a message from Captain Trainer, to know if I would remain on shore, or return on board the Hound before sunset. It was now evening, and the musquitos were so numerous and troublesome on shore here, that I determined to sleep in the schooner. The trading was done for the day on board, and as I had the advantage of the interpreter, I took a range round the village and through the valley, wending my way circuitously towards the beach.

CHAPTER XXVI.

DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWN. — THE SURROUNDING SCENERY. — PRESENTS TO BOOLOOMA AND ROWNAA. — PASS THROUGH THE TOWN INTO THE INTERIOR. — RICH VEGETATION. — THE RIVER. — STRANGE SCENERY. — THE LAND BIRDS. — ARRIVE AT AN OUT-POST — WARRIORS ON GUARD. — THEIR PAINT AND ARMS. — CAPTURE OF TWO CANOES. — PROOFS OR CANNIBALISM. — VISIT ANOTHER OUT-POST. — LATE SKIRMISH WITH THE ENEMY. — FOUR MEN TAKEN OFF PRISONERS. — SAVAGE APPEARANCE OF THE WOUNDED WARRIORS. — THIS STATION. — ITS STRONG POSITION. — SCENERY. — DISTANT VIEW OF THE ENEMIES OUT-POSTS.

THE huts of the natives were built, or rather formed, in clusters, of about fifteen or twenty, and situated on eminences at convenient distances, so that, in case of attack, a shout or signal of any kind could be easily made with effect. There were different tribes in this district, all living in amity with each other, and subject to Boolooma: each tribe seemed "to differ from the other in the architecture of their dwellings, but most of them were formed in the following manner:

A kind of square pit was dug out of the ground, about three feet deep, the centre was beaten firmly and evenly down by a heavy piece of wood, in the manner that paving-stones are thumped down by a paver. The sides of this pit were served in the same manner by a less heavy instrument; this then was exposed to the sun for a few days until the dampness was effectually carried off, then a set of curved sticks, of sufficient strength, were placed over it, the ends resting about two feet clear of the hole or pit, with, of course, the convexity of the curves upwards; branches of the palm-trees were then laid on, and cocoa-nut tree leaves, or a covering of coarse flags, answered for thatch, which, in most instances, or in cleared grounds, where there was no shade, was covered over with a thick layer of well wrought mud, smoothed down by the aid of a flattened piece of wood.

The earth was cut through, or deepened, at one end, so as to form an entrance, of about five feet high by three wide. A layer of small dried cane was laid on the floor, dried grass over that, and the abode was complete. The portion of earth between the pit and the ends of the roofing timbers, formed a convenient shelf, on which was placed the food, implements of war, &c. of the family; and I confess

I was amazed, on entering several of these houses, to observe such quantities of spears, clubs, bows, arrows, &c. seeing the natives so peaceable-looking and unarmed.

You may well ask me why the ground was excavated, and dwellings of this peculiar kind constructed? The answer is this, that savages generally build their huts in any manner that may suit temporally their wants, or the climate they are placed in. This island being nearly on the Equator, the air is very warm, and a rest in any of these huts or burrows is cool and refreshing, as the earth around you is not heated, neither can the hot rays of the sun affect the inside, as the roof is mud-covered; the door-way, or entrance, is always at the side that the wind generally blows on, and there is a feeling of instant relief experienced from the heat, and musquitos, when you take a dive into these subterraneous retreats.

Where tribes are occasionally on the move here, they do not take the trouble to make their huts in the manner I have described, but speedily raise one up, with supporters and a roof over all, which is, of course, greatly open on all sides, and admits heat and troublesome flies, insects, &c. in abundance. There is another very important reason why they

should roof these queer-looking houses over with mud, and that is, in war time, or in case of civil war amongst the tribes of a district (a common occurrence here), they could defend themselves better, in case of sudden attack, and be free from the fears of their villages being reduced to ashes. However, here, as well as in other places, there are some careless, indolent, fellows, who do not relish the idea of much labour, — are too lazy either to excavate the ground, or work mud to render themselves safe from their huts being set on fire, but pitch up any kind of a shed against a tree, rock, &c. that may serve to preserve them from the sun and rain.

I have remarked that these excavated dwellings afford an agreeable retreat from the great heat of the tropical sun here: but if the hut should have been some time made and occupied, annoyances of a most unpleasant description are to be experienced by the attacks of vermin, which rapidly increase in these abodes; so that, to a stranger remaining on shore at night, a temporary shed, formed of poles and the leafy boughs of trees, even with the occasional attack of the musquitos, is preferable.

In this district the land was beautifully diversified with hill and vale, covered here and there with rich groves of palm, nutmeg, and cocoa-nut trees, a dash-

ing stream of crystalline clearness from the interior, made a tortuous course through this district, receiving some rippling tributaries in its passage to the sea, with which it united itself nearly abreast of where our vessel lay. Hills of moderate height clothed with timber, circumscribed the view to a few miles; but far in the interior some lofty mountains reared up their heads, as if to look into this district which nature beautifully ornamented and bountifully supplied; altogether, the varied views of this natural and pleasing scenery so fascinated me that the setting sun had thrown a darkened shadow over the scene before I arrived at the beach.

The greater part of the natives had retired to their huts for the night. Rownaa was at the landing-place waiting for us, so he, the interpreter and I embarked in a canoe, and paddled off to the Hound, where I enjoyed comparative security from the annoying musquito, &c. for the night.

After experiencing so much kindness and safety during my first excursion on shore, I thought it better, before landing again, to ensure the continued friendship of Rownaa and his royal father, by presenting to them some presents, so I gave to each a piece of red cloth, sufficient to cover the shoulders, and a string of blue delft beads. This trifle seemed

to be received with expressive signs of unbounded satisfaction; yet after a few minutes, I was informed, through the interpreter, that old Boolooma considered his dignity required something additional to particularize his consequence over his son; so, to make matters square I gave him also a small bright boat-axe, which was the cause of great merriment on board, as he no sooner found it his own, than he cut all sorts of capers round the deck, flourishing it over his head, cleaving the air occasionally with it, and all the time singing, in his own way, some bloody war song.

Having thus sealed the friendship existing between us, I was determined to make every use of it, and gratify myself by exploring the surrounding country. It had a peculiar interest at the time, as Boolooma's people were involved in a serious war with others of distant districts, and the numerous outposts had almost daily skirmishes with their enemies. Before leaving the vessel again, I took advantage of the interpreter to explain the extent of my desire for exploration to Rownaa, who was to be my guide, friend, &c., also to try and get hold of the meaning and manner of expressing a few words in the native tongue, which, if it was not

useful, I considered it at least amusing. From my short stay with these people, I was prevented from catching accurately the sound of most of their words, so as to give you any correct idea of their language by writing it down; however, the signification of nearly all those I used were the essentials, such as "something to eat," "water," "enough," "friend," "enemy," &c. So having now arranged every thing as well as I could, in body and mind, accompanied by Rownaa, I again landed amongst these people, and was (using a court phrase) "graciously received."

In walking along from the landing-place, I enjoyed more freedom from the presence of the curious throng than on the preceding day. My worthy friend, who strutted on before me with comical dignity, attracted their attention, chiefly in consequence of his wearing my bit of showy red cloth round his shoulders, and the blue beads round his neck, which latter the ladies seemed to admire much, occasionally pressing close on him, with the object of handling them, however he would, good humouredly, now and then swing his war-paddle round him, which caused them to retire laughing, and keep a respectful distance. When we arrived at the outskirts of the town he turned round, addressed the people for

two or three minutes in a sharp and emphatic manner, and they at once moved off and allowed us to pursue our walk without further annoyance.

About two miles beyond the town we struck on the banks of the river which ran through this valley, and continued our march along it in a south-westerly direction towards the interior, through the palm, nutmeg, cocoa-nut, magnolia, and other trees, which were rich and magnificent in appearance; they did not much delay us, as they were well apart and open, except in some isolated spots where the wild vine, and a dense growth of shrubs, would perfect a net-work that caused us to make a short circuit.

The banks of the stream was in some places low, muddy, and covered with cane brakes; in others, shining, rugged rocks, formed the embankment; occasionally a huge tree might be seen leaning over the river, and its leafy branches causing a darkened shadow on its rippled surface; in it I observed some fine mullet and shoals of handsome gold-fish. As we passed over any eminence, the woods being open, the landscape that displayed itself to us, in all its natural beauty, was picturesque in the extreme.

What gave a peculiar effect to the scene, was the existence of gigantic white rocks that reared them-

selves high up clear of the luxuriant forest foliage: one had the appearance of a huge cathedral with its lofty spire; another, a large building with a conspicuously grand dome, with here and there, countless monuments and spires, all leading you to imagine from a distance that a magnificent city of the most approved architecture was there, partly concealed by a softened bed of tropical foliage.

Wild hogs, startled by us, dashed past with an angry grunt, exhibiting tusks of a most formidable size; they were nearly all of a black colour. Lizards of a large size were frequently seen: small birds were numerous, the plumage rich, varied, and gaudy. There was no song like that of the British bird, all was chatter, particularly with the various coloured paroquettes, which were so numerous that they literally covered the smaller bushes. The musquitos were less annoying than nearer the sea. Doves were also very numerous, and made a great deal of noise in their own way; they were walking and running along the grass in such numbers, that with the aid of a small stick I could knock down as many of them as we might require.

About noon we made a halt at one of the outposts, which was an elevated platform of ground with a temporary shed erected to serve as a guard-house, or

resting-place for those that were off duty. This mound was naturally faced with steep rocks, and partially shaded by a clump of lofty trees. The station was guarded by about thirty grim-looking warriors all armed with lances, clubs, bows and arrows, and their bodies and legs streaked with red ochre. Though they seemed curious on our first appearance among them, they did not exhibit the noisy levity of the peaceable people I first encountered on landing. These were warriors on duty, and a strong, athletic, and daring-looking set of fellows they were.

They examined the red cloth on Rownaa's shoulders with evident pleasure, and were curious about my gun, which they dare not handle, having the taboo, or sacred cord, round it. They at once placed before us some fried pork and roasted bananas, which we enjoyed much; and afterwards lay down on the mats to rest ourselves, being well fatigued after a twelve or fourteen miles' tramp in sultry weather.

After a while, accompanied by my friend and four of the warriors, I examined the station more closely. The sides of the river here were very steep, and the stream itself not wide, but deep and flowing swiftly in its course. It made a curve or bend round this eminence, sweeping rapidly past. At the base of the

mound there was a small canoe harbour, capable of containing about a dozen of them in still water, and, from its narrow entrance, completely out of the influence of the current. Here lay two of the enemy's canoes, which had been captured by my friends.

When first seen, they were manned by twelve men, six in each, who endeavoured to steal past this post for a surprise on the upper village; were attacked by the sturdy band I have described, had two of their men killed, the rest jumped into the water, swam across the river, and escaped further loss by clambering up the rocks on the opposite shore. This occurred about ten hours before my arrival at the place, and I found the bodies of the men in the canoes covered over with leaves. They had been fairly riddled with arrows and spears, and their skulls were beaten flat with clubs. The legs were amputated at the knees, hands off at the wrists, hair cut off the head, &c. preparatory to cooking them.

This was the first positive proof I had of their being cannibals, and took the liberty of showing, by all the signs I could, my deep disgust at this part of the affair. The chief who had charge of this station was with us, and seemed to comprehend me perfectly, and by way of explanation, made satisfactorily expressive signs, that their enemies not far off caught

four of his men, and that they would be eaten; pointed earnestly to a pass between two hills higher up, where there was another guard of men stationed, as much as to say, "Come up there and see." So off we started at a smart pace through a natural avenue of trees along a well-trodden foot-path, and after a little arrived at the next station, which was guarded by about fifty men of savage aspect. They all appeared to be greatly excited: many were wounded and had bandages of leaves tied round their legs, arms, and bodies. They had a recent encounter with the enemy, which resulted in their still holding their post, with the loss of four of their men taken off as prisoners.

This station had a very strange appearance; it was merely a cut or gap in a long range of hills, that extended some miles to the north and south. It was about one hundred feet wide, and a great pile of large broken rocks seemed to form a barrier that would be with difficulty forced, guarded by even a few men. To the right of this, the long shed or guard-house was erected, the thatch of which was covered with mud, to make it fire-proof.

Close to the house, we commenced our ascent of the hill which formed one of the extremities of the ridge at the gap. It was very steep, but the winding

path up, made by these warriors to facilitate their going up and down on the look out, rendered our exertion less fatiguing than I at first imagined it would be. These, as it were winding stairs, at last brought us to the summit, and we stood on a beautiful patch of grass of about two acres in extent, surrounded by a grove of large Ito or iron-wood trees. They had somewhat the aspect of fir or pine trees; they had a more luxuriant appearance than any I had ever seen before. This kind of tree never grows in low grounds, it is only found on the summits of the mountains. The natives prize the wood much; they polish it very highly, and make spears, clubs, paddles, &c. of it.

The view we now enjoyed was one of vast extent, natural grandeur, and great variety. We were at an elevation of about nine hundred feet above the country before us. The land was quite different from that which I had already passed through; there were no dense forests or rugged rocks and mountains. The whole face of the country, as far as the eye could see distinctly, was undulating. Wave after wave of land, covered with grass of a lively green colour, clumps of trees of various sizes, at irregular distances from each other, lakes of various extent, and shining streams writhing their snake-like course through the land. In fact, the landscape now before us caused me

to imagine for a moment that I beheld a scientifically arranged English park on a large scale.

The villages of the natives seemed to be clustered here and there round the margin of the lakes and banks of the rivers, but no appearance whatever of plantations or cultivation of the ground. No, no, the savages here are too proud to till the ground! They will dance, sing, fish, hunt the wild hog, fight, &c., but as to work . . . . . ! Indeed, Providence has amply supplied them with every necessary, and even luxury, that they require in their present condition, without manual labour; and, when such exertion is not actually required, they philosophically avoid it.

About one mile and a half from the base of the hill on which we stood, a stream of considerable size passed on in a northerly direction. This seemed to form the boundary of this new country, and a line of demarcation between the tribes inhabiting it and my present friends. On the opposite banks, about two miles from each other, were a chain of outposts or guard-houses, similar to those formed by Boolooma's people — seemed all to be garrisoned, for a great number of armed natives were hovering about them and on the river in canoes.

These houses were generally on the most elevated spots, and in clear view of each other. Thus, an extensive district will have its detachments, or picquets of warriors, stationed at regular intervals around it, so that the body of the population will be in a great measure free from a surprise. I may as well tell you now what information I afterwards collected, by personal observation, about those advanced guard-houses and their occupants.

CHAPTER XXVII.

CIVIL WARS IN NEW IRELAND. — POWER AND DESPOTISM OF THE CHIEFS. — METHOD OF LEVYING WARRIORS. — POLYGAMY. — ATTACHMENT OF THE TRIBES TO THEIR CHIEFS. — HIS INTERFERENCE IN DOMESTIC AFFAIRS. — LUDICROUS PUNISHMENT FOR A SCAMP, OR LAZY FELLOW. — A CHOSEN BAND OF WARRIORS START OFF TO RESCUE THEIR MEN FROM THE ENEMY. — ROWNAA AND I JOIN THE EXPEDITION. — FIRST SIGHT OF THE PRISONERS AND THE ENEMY. — DANCE, AND THE FIRE. — OUR ADVANTAGEOUS POSITION. — THE ATTACK. — THE RESCUE. — THE RAVINE. — CHARGE OF THE ENEMY TO REGAIN PRISONERS. — OUR COVER. — ONE OF OUR CHIEFS WOUNDED. — OUR POSITION ATTACKED. — SHARP CONFLICT. — OUR CRITICAL SITUATION. — FINAL CHARGE OF THE ENEMY. — THEIR REPULSE AND RETREAT.

In New Ireland the chiefs of the various tribes and districts are continually at war, and, though their wars are not of a very devastating character, yet they require a constant supply of men and equipments, such as they are, either to carry on a border war, or fight a decisive battle, if necessary or agreed upon. The power of the chief is absolute—life and

death are in his hands! It would be instant death to dispute his authority! He governs his people with true despotism; they live in a state of abject serfdom to him, yet seem to enjoy themselves much, and appear to be always laughing and merry.

To the free and independent mind of a British subject this state of things may appear strange, and a question will naturally arise,—How can a despotic chief or governor and his people enjoy safety, contentment, or confidence in each other? It is a difficult problem to solve, yet an explanation, as far as New Ireland is concerned, may be satisfactory and not unamusing. The power of the chiefs, as I have said, is absolute—their word or command, the law of the tribe. If he requires warriors, he orders a review of the entire population, and chooses his men. These at once turn out with alacrity, each man having his own spears, clubs, bows and arrows, &c., and are sent off, in charge of petty chiefs, to their respective stations, where they serve for one month, and at the expiration of that time are relieved by others.

This method of levying troops is not considered irksome by the natives, to most of them it is merely a pleasant variety; they are not unhappy about their wives and children, as they are always accompanied

by them. It is a matter of sound policy on the part of these chiefs to grant this favour to the men; if they had to leave them behind, they say they would "too much fret." There are some scamps who would rather go alone; but, on this head, the chief sides with the wife and children, and orders the men to bring them.

Polygamy is in its glory here, a warrior has as many wives as he likes; many of them are taken from the enemy. A warrior, when about to move on service, has a bundle of spears and clubs under one arm, bow and quiver with arrows under the other, three or four wives after him carrying mats, provisions, &c., and a host of little black laughing responsibilities in the rear, so that he makes not only a formidable, but very respectable appearance, as he marches along. Indeed, the turning out of these men for service at the outposts is a rich scene of the most lively merriment, for as each man files off to his place, accompanied by all his domestic endearments, he receives a burst of vociferous acclamations from the crowd, that causes much laughter in the entire family, and no doubt gives them every encouragement in their proceedings.

These people are much attached to their chiefs. If they require an additional patch of land, or liberty

to build a house any where, it is granted. If they quarrel among themselves, or have complaints to make, the head chief's ear is kindly open to all,—to the poorest man as well as the petty chief. If invasion threatens their district, he is in the front ranks to repel it; and let the war cause a smart skirmish, or a great battle, he is always in the front and where danger presses most; so that he has their love and respect.

The head chief often interferes in minor matters of a domestic nature; for instance, if a lazy fellow has a wife or two and a few children, and through his love for fishing, dancing, and loitering idly about, neglects to bring in the necessary supplies for his family, a complaint is made, the chief visits the house in person, and if he sees just grounds for punishment, he orders out the whole population of the village,—men, women, and children, arm themselves with a stiff birch made of small canes, they then form a long double line about six feet apart, and wait with anxious glee the approach of the delinquent.

At last he is placed at one end of the lines amidst a shower of yells, screams, jibes, &c. The word is given by the chief, and away he darts at his utmost speed through the ranks, every one endeavouring to hit him as he passes. According to his deserts, he

may get off with running the line once, or may have to do so twice or thrice; but he is skilled in cunning and fleetness that can run the lines even once, without having his skin tickled for him by the hearty application of the birch, wielded by some strong women!

As the punishment is not of a fatal kind, the whole affair creates unrestricted merriment. If the victim is a smart fellow, he may escape with few blows; but if he is heavy, sulky, and dogged, he pays for it. Such a man comes off covered with welts on his bare skin from his head to his heels. For one month afterwards his family are provided for by the public at large, under the fatherly superintendence of the chief. At the expiration of that time, if he has all his domestic matters in perfect order, as a good father and provident husband ought to have, he again resumes his place in society, and shortly afterwards, perhaps helps, with an experienced hand, to flagellate some one else.

If any man from his faults and habits becomes constantly annoying to society, he is expelled from his tribe and district; and if he joins another one, he does so at a disadvantage, being received only as a degraded man, he will get no wife to be his companion, and the children will scoff at him. Such is

the punishment that is awarded and inflicted on the vicious and indolent in New Ireland!

From the summit of the hill on which we stood, I enjoyed for a long time the splendid landscape before me. The men and chiefs scanned closely the country in view, but could not perceive men anywhere clustered together, or any other indication of the locality of their friends who were in the hands of the enemy as prisoners. They had been seen by one of my friend's scouts about two miles off, only two or three hours since. Rownaa gave me to understand there was a possibility of rescuing them yet. So the warriors held a council for the purpose of devising the surest and safest plan to adopt, or course to pursue.

A few minutes conversation decided the arrangements; twenty warriors from the station, with Rownaa and I, formed this adventurous party. I had two reasons for accompanying them; the first was, I had a wish to observe their proceedings; secondly, I thought I would be safer with my friend, the Prince, than to remain at the station, reduced in strength as it was, by the abstraction of so many chosen men from it. Every thing being arranged, off we started, along the mountain range in a northerly direction; keeping well under cover of the

bushes, so that our rapid movements onwards, might escape the observation of the enemy's outposts.

Our order of march was in double file; one line keeping higher up on the ridge than the other, and wherever the cover of the bushes and trees were deficient, the men moved along on their hands and feet, through long grass and reeds that served to conceal their persons. The chief of the station was in the advance, and Rownaa and I moved along with the after-guard. There was little or no wind, the air was sultry, and the rapid progress our party made, caused them all to pant like dogs after a hard run; whatever was seen or occurred in the front, was rapidly conveyed from one to another until it reached the rear; for instance, if our course was altered, so as to keep higher up, or lower down on the range of elevated ground we were moving on, it was silently telegraphed to the rear.

The occasional halt, or stand still of the party, when a few of them were well in view in a clear space, was curious in the extreme, and presented a novel scene worthy of the pencil of a first-rate artist; in whatever position the body or limbs were thrown on the signal being given, so they remained as if petrified into statues; one, with body erect and arms extended, in the act of pushing aside some bushes to

effect a passage, another on hands and feet, with straining eyes, peering forward to watch those in advance of him; another, crouched like a wild beast, ready to spring forward; and many of them in fine graceful attitudes, attentively listening to catch the sounds that might signal him.

It was now late in the day, and the red glare of the descending sun gave additional and mysterious effect to the landscape. I confess that the peculiarity of this forced march, its rapidity and purpose, so interested and animated me, that I "went a-head" with as much nimbleness as any of the party. A good five miles had been passed over, and no incident of any account happened; neither was there a sound to intrude on the silence of the party, save the occasional grunt of a hog, or the chatter of a bird. We had by this time diverged from our elevated path and kept on more to the base of the hills, so that we could closely scrutinise the country of the enemy as we passed along.

At last the signal was given to lie still, and instantly the whole party dropped close to the ground amongst the long grass, reeds, and bushes. What was seen in the front was speedily communicated to the rear. Word was also passed along for Rownaa and I to go, under close cover, to the head of the line. We

crawled through the lines silently on, and were soon by the side of the chief who led the advance of the party. He was with two men under the close shade of some thick bushes, from which place there was a long and distinct view of a plain of grass land of considerable extent. As soon as we came near enough to him, he pointed his finger out in a particular direction, and whispered to Rownaa, earnestly, for a few minutes.

Not more than three hundred yards from where we stood were grouped together about forty or fifty savages, some sitting down round a huge fire, whilst others amused themselves loitering about and dancing in circles, holding each other's hands. This chosen and retired spot was many miles clear of the usual fighting ground, and no doubt they thought they could undisturbedly enjoy a quiet cannibalistic entertainment at the expense of our poor fellows, the prisoners, who lay on the grass close to them, bound hand and foot; and they seemed to be so confident of their retirement, that they had no men scattered about as outposts or guards against surprise.

The head of our lines now rested on the brink of a small sandy-bottomed ravine, the banks of which were steep and covered with trees and bushes. The end of this, on which we halted, sloped gradually

into the plain, nearly opposite to where the enemy were assembled; from this, the ravine or gap passed right over the hills we were on, and ended on the banks of a rapid river, which, if gained, would soon sweep us down into a district, the population of which were friendly, and for some years had been a faithful ally of Boolooma's.

The necessary arrangements for the assault, as well as a safe retreat, were soon made. Several picked bow and arrow men were distributed, in close ambush, along the banks of the ravine on either side; four active fellows were sent on about half a mile further to make a feint and attract the attentions of the enemy, whilst a chosen band occupied the foot of the ravine, ready to make a dash into the plain, at a seasonable time, to extricate the prisoners. We were now anxiously waiting the result of the intended feint.

At last a wild yell arose some distance off, and echoed along the mountain range. The savages started up and looked round them in evident surprise. Two or three more yells were given; and it became clear to us, our men had boldly shown themselves, as two thirds of the enemy now snatched up their arms and bounded away in the direction of the sound or feint, yelping and yelling like a pack of wolves. The

party who were stationed at the foot of the pass now made a rush to where the prisoners lay. The astonishment of the remaining portion of the enemy caused them to run off for a short distance and scatter about. The lashings that tied the men were cut loose with a sharp piece of flint. Two of them jumped up with great energy; the others were so swelled and sore in the hands and feet that they could not move, so they were carried off at a rapid rate by our party to the appointed ground, and had scarcely entered the ravine when the enemy recovered from their fright.

Perceiving the loss of the prisoners, and drift of our manœuvre, a loud war yell proclaimed the return of the body that were attracted off by the feint, the union of all of them, and a simultaneous rush after our party. The warriors who had charge of the enfeebled men continued their course up the pass at a rapid rate, while a small party covered their rear the remainder lined the bushes on either side. The enemy, in a body, dashed up boldly after them until they came directly under our ambuscade, when a few arrows from our party made them halt to consider a little. We were in good cover, and they could only guess the bush the arrow came from, so a few were discharged at random, whisking through

the air and sticking here and there in the bushes, without doing any material harm.

At last, one of our petty chiefs received a barbed javelin through the arm, and as there was no possibility of drawing it back, the shaft was broken to pull it through. Rownaa now took the command of the men near us, and in a few minutes the enemy were assailed by a shower of arrows and darts, and not a few lay writhing on the ground. They felt their position so exposed, that a body of them formed to ascend the banks on our side of the ravine and attack our ambuscade. There was a gap in the bank where the earth had fallen down, which formed an easy ascent for them. This was the vulnerable point of our position, and only a few to defend it. A couple of dozen of large round stones were arranged at the top, which was shaded over with large bushes. Rownaa and the men kept themselves crouched and ready, and I had no alternative but to remain with them. If I moved they would see me, and a barbed arrow or two might be my only reward for trying to escape.

Our opponents gave a yell and charged up the slope. The stones were touched by us, and away they rolled down amongst the party, stumbling many of them, and no doubt damaging their legs a little.

However, they pushed on, discharging arrows and darting spears or short javelins. This was smartly returned by our men, who now showed themselves, with clubs and spears in their hands, ready to dispute the ground hand to hand. We were now very critically situated: the enemy were in numbers at least five to our one, and our only safe position all but taken.

I knew their fate would be mine, so I resolved to act accordingly. They were purposing to make their final rush on us, when our men gave them their last arrows in a volley. A serious consideration for my personal safety, and the necessity for self-defence, compelled me to fire both barrels of my gun into the advancing crowd. This new instrument of warfare, both in effect and sound, at once staggered them. Our men darted in a few more spears, and a second discharge from my gun caused them all to run down the slope into the bottom of the ravine. It was an exciting time for all of us, and seeing matters turn, I may say, unexpectedly favourable, I forgot I was in New Ireland amongst savages, that could not understand a word I said, and gave at this point of our triumph a hearty English "hurrah!" which frightened the enemy so much, that they, one and all that could run did, with praiseworthy speed,

away towards their own district, and left us in quiet possession of the hills.

I suppose the strange sound of my "gun" and "hurrah!" caused them to imagine that Rownaa had some supernatural confederate with him. This ticklish affair checked the enemy and afforded time to our retreating party to carry off the rescued prisoners. The worthy fellows took every advantage of it, as we did not come up with them until they were fairly over the mountains on the other side.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODE and SHAW,
New-street-Square.

ADVENTURES

ON THE

WESTERN COAST

OF

SOUTH AMERICA,

AND THE

INTERIOR OF CALIFORNIA:

INCLUDING

A NARRATIVE OF INCIDENTS

AT

THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS, NEW IRELAND, NEW BRITAIN, NEW GUINEA,

AND OTHER ISLANDS IN THE PACIFIC OCEAN;

WITH

AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATURAL PRODUCTIONS, AND THE MANNERS AND CUSTOMS, IN PEACE AND WAR, OF THE VARIOUS SAVAGE TRIBES VISITED.

BY JOHN COULTER, M.D.

AUTHOR OF "ADVENTURES IN THE PACIFIC," ETC.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1847.

CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Descend from the mountain range. — Ford a river. — Our return to the station. — Curious night torches. — A night at the outpost. — The wounded are embarked in canoes. — Continue our march through the country. — A wild looking party. — My costume. — Description of the country. — Enter the valley of a friendly tribe — its romantic beauty. — An uproarious welcome. — Hospitality of the natives. — The Kurinaa or dance. — The great peculiarity and humour of it. —I explore the valley.— Natives practical Botanists Page 1

CHAP. II.

Heathenism in New Ireland. — Huge images — their ludicrous aspect. — Offerings to the idols. — Native method of burial. — Fish in the rivers. — We embark in canoes. — Paddle along shore by night. — Pass the bay of a hostile tribe. — Our difficulties. — We are attacked by a large body of the enemy in canoes. — A savage sea-fight. — Our danger-

ous situation. — Bravery of our party. — The enemy beaten off. — Our loss. — Proceed on. — Canoes form funeral order. — The wild death yell. — I arrive again on board the Hound. — My garments - - - Page 12

CHAP. III.

The natives begin thieving. — The king's conduct. — A scolding match. — Confusion in Boolooma's tribe. — Native battle on the beach. — We sail from this bay. — Anchor in several bays more to the north-westward. — Hostility of the natives. — Anchor in a bay at the northern part of the island. — Natives surround the vessel — their daring. — We are compelled to fire on them. — Island of New Hanover. — Lightning, thunder, and heavy rains. — A typhoon. — Fine weather again. — Steer for the western side of New Hanover. — Currents, seaweed, &c. — Appearance of the island. — Run into a bay called Wattoo. — Anchor. — Canoes arrive about the Hound. — The natives - - - - 28

CHAP. IV.

Sunrise. — View from the anchorage. — King Teru visits the vessel — his retinue. — A young prince. — Cupid. — The royal party go on shore again. — I land under protection. — The native town. — Polygamy. — Dancing, music, &c. — A foolish jest causes a war between us and the natives. — Desperate attack on the Hound. — Natives attempt to board. — A hard fight. — Savages beaten off. — Another disaster. — Our vessel on fire. — Manly exertions of the crew. — The fire extinguished - - 40

CHAP. V.

Sail from New Hanover. — Run along the south-western shore of New Ireland. — Appearance of this side of the island. — The natives. — Sail for New Britain. — Volcanoes in sight. — Thick weather. — Fall in with Willaumez's Islands. — The current. — Dangerous navigation. — Let go the anchor. — The haze clears off. — Fascinating view from the vessel. — Calm anchorage. — Captain Trainer with four men and I land on the island to examine it. — Curious natural arrangement of mangrove bushes. — Proceed inland. — Lovely scene. — Birds, insects, &c. — Bird of Paradise. — Return to the boat. — A strange inhabitant of the island. — He goes with us on board the Hound. — A description of him Page 53

CHAP. VI.

A Crusoe. — James Selwin's history. — The Captain and I visit Selwin's house. — North side of the island. — Selwin's house and plantation. — Selwin's family. — Our introduction to them. — An account of them. — We are entertained by Selwin. — A funny scene. — Farther account of the island. — Hot springs. — Beauty of scenery. — Our return to the boat. — Selwin's canoe. — Our sailors in charge of the boat. — Return to the Hound - - 71

CHAP. VII.

Night at our anchorage. — We all contribute clothing, &c. to Selwin. — Indications of a blow. — Prepare for it. — Force of the hurricane. — Fine weather again. — Accompany Selwin back to his house. — My sojourn with Selwin. — Sail

from this island. — Natives and their huts on the southern part of New Britain. — Volcanic mountains. — Sail southerly. — Pass Sir George Rook's island. — Make the land of New Guinea at King William's Cape. — Appearance of the land from the vessel. — Enter a bay. — An old acquaintance at anchor. — Captain Stewart visits the Hound. — A digression. — Yankee and John Bull sailors. — An account of Captain Stewart. — Some of his doings in the Pacific Page 94

CHAP. VIII.

Captain Stewart's offer to Captain Trainer. — We go on board the brig. — Stewart captures a Papuan chief. — A description of this savage. — Stewart's plan to make friends with the Papuans — its success. — Commence trading. — Barbarian scene. — Native houses. — Natural productions of this district. — More noisy pets on board. — I land at the town. — Awkwardly situated. — My escape. — Bows and arrows of the Papuans. — Sail from this bay. — Both vessels keep in company. — Run along shore. — Hostile demonstration of the natives. — Anchor in a bay. — The vessels attacked by Papuans. — We are obliged to fire on them and their town. — Sail across the mouth of Great Bay. — Islands of Mysory and Jobie. — Chinese and Papuans - 109

CHAP. IX.

Anchor in Geelvink's Bay. — Stewart meets an old acquaintance. — A Chinese junk at anchor. — Stewart scolds the captain of the junk. — Rich scene. — We get trading materials from the Chinaman. — Round the western extreme of Papua. — Enter M'Clure's Inlet. — Effect of the currents on

the vessels in our passage round. — Run deep into the inlet. — A Dutch brig at anchor — Both vessels are moored close to her. — Dutch captain and supercargo visit us. — The Papuans on friendly terms with them. — A matrimonial alliance sometimes useful. — Spend the evening on board the Dutch brig. — Conviviality and its results. — All hands a-hoy. — The non-appearance of the crew. — Reason why. — Miller and I land at the Papuan town. — An account of it and its inhabitants.—Miller's house—his Papuan relatives Page 124

CHAP. X.

Sunrise in New Guinea. — A gathering of savages for a wild hog-hunt. — We proceed into the interior. — Scenery of the country. — Arrival at the cane brakes. — Papuans and their dogs beat cover. — Rush of hogs. — General chase after them. — Wild scene. — Miller and I warm to the sport. — Termination of the hunt. — Our return to the town and reception. — Miller's account of how he and the Dutch captain made friends with the Papuans. — We sail out of M'Clure's Inlet. — Steer southerly. — Thick weather. — The report of a gun. — Steer for it. — Haze clears off. — Captain Stewart's brig attacked by Malay prows. — We run down to her assistance. — The Malays attempt to board the brig. — Our friendly aid — its results. — Our crew assist in repairing damages on board the brig - - - - 143

CHAP. XI.

We steer in again for New Guinea. — Both vessels enter a river. — An account of it and the adjacent country. — Captain Trainer with four men and I start off on an exploring excursion. — The country. — Night encampment. — Our

advance into the forests. — Arrive at the bank of a stream.— Encamp to refresh ourselves. — The country of the Horraforas tribes. — An unexpected guest. — A white man chief of a tribe of Horraforas. — An account of this strange race of savages - - - - - Page 160

CHAP. XII.

Terry Connel's account of himself — his adventures and vicissitudes in many parts of the world until the period of our arrival — his now dignified position in life. — Remarks on white men adopting a savage life. — King Connel's advice to us. — A dangerous locality. — We follow Connel — his cautious movements. — Varied scenery. — We arrive within Connel's line of scouts. — The reason why the tribes keep out their scouts. — A possible bar against the residence of missionaries in New Guinea. — The probable success of a colony of Christians - - - - - 174

CHAP. XIII.

Push on for the town. — A primitive ferry. — Arrive at the town. — Connel's welcome. — Peculiarity of the houses constructed in the trees. — Curiosity of the Horraforas to see us. — Effect of torch-light amongst the trees. — Connel's hospitality. — A description of the town. — Method of erecting these curious abodes. — Domestic utensils. — The Horrafora tribes in peace and war. — The women. — Costume of both sexes — their amusements, &c. — Chinese gongs. — An enemy's scout killed and brought into town. — How our friends dispose of the body. — War between the tribes. — We are delayed in this town. — A peep at the enemy. — A specimen of the poison used on arrow heads. — A grand entertainment. — Horrafora dancing and music - - 188

CHAP. XIV.

A tropical lightning and thunder storm. — Bad news. — Our misgivings. — Stroll through the town. — Strange scenes. — Captain Trainer enjoys the fun. — Connel's capture of one of the enemy's chiefs. — He extorts information from the wounded savage. — A wild scene. — Marriage ceremony in Connel's tribe. — Courtship amongst the Horraforas. — Various languages of the different tribes. — Connel's visit to us the night before the battle - - - - Page 206

CHAP. XV.

The alarm gong. — Connel's warriors in review — their ferocious appearance. — We join them as allies. — Our vociferous reception. — Connel's order of march. — The savages go ahead. — Unexpected force of the enemy. — Connel's generalship. — Advance of the enemy. — Connel heads a savage charge. — The battle. — An account of it from beginning to ending. — Horrid consummation of savage warfare. — Trainer and I walk over the battle-ground. — Connel musters fresh men. — We all start off for the enemy's town - - - - - - - 219

CHAP. XVI.

Arrive at the mountains. — Bivouac. — Push on. — Fall in with a wounded warrior. — Arrive at the White Paints' town. — Our warriors in possession of it. — The women. — Proceed on our route. — Encamp at the river. — Another hog-hunt. — Canoes arrive. — We paddle down the stream. — The river scenery. — A rapid. — The vessels in sight. — A jest. — Captain Stewart's amazement at seeing us. — On

board the Hound again. — Connel's body-guard of savages.— Stewart's introduction to the chief. — Connel's new costume. — Stewart's account of transactions since we left him. — A cabin scene. — Native fishing. — Trading with Connel's tribe. — Sporting through the country. — The vessels drop down the river. — Anchor off a watering-place. — Religion of the Horraforas. — Farewell to Connel and his savages Page 235

CHAP. XVII.

Sail round Cape Valsche. — Torres Straits. — Southern shore of New Guinea. — Some description of the country. — Hostile natives. — Thick weather. — Narrow escape. — Heavy squalls. — Cape York. — The vessels part company. — Latest account of Captain Stewart. — Remarks on the natives lately visited.—New Hebrides. — Island of Mallicollo. — Sandwich Harbour. — Whaler and a trader at anchor — their brush with natives. — We steer along the island. — Trade with the natives. — An account of them. — Appearance of the island. — Good news per ship Isaic Coffin. — Arrive at Tahiti. — The Stratford refitting. — Latest intelligence of Captain Trainer and the Hound - - - - 257

CHAP. XVIII.

Some remarks on my last visit to Tahiti. — We sail over to Eimeo. — Passage home. — Easter Island. — A supply of yams procured. — The article of trade. — Ice islands — their magnificence. — Dangerous navigation. — Cape Horn. — The trade winds on the African coast. — Chops of the Channel. — Soundings. — A sailor's trick. — Dungeness. — Pilot on board. — Home again. — My entry into London 269

ADVENTURES

ON

THE WESTERN COAST

OF

SOUTH AMERICA.

CHAPTER I.

DESCEND FROM THE MOUNTAIN RANGE. — FORD A RIVER. — OUR RETURN TO THE STATION. — CURIOUS NIGHT TORCHES. — A NIGHT AT THE OUTPOST. — THE WOUNDED ARE EMBARKED IN CANOES. — CONTINUE OUR MARCH THROUGH THE COUNTRY. — A WILD-LOOKING PARTY. — MY COSTUME. — DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTRY. — ENTER THE VALLEY OF A FRIENDLY TRIBE. — ITS ROMANTIC BEAUTY. — AN UPROARIOUS WELCOME. — HOSPITALITY OF THE NATIVES. — THE KURINAA OR DANCE. — THE GREAT PECULIARITY AND HUMOUR OF IT. — I EXPLORE THE VALLEY. — NATIVES PRACTICAL BOTANISTS.

WHEN people escape safely from any serious scrape or predicament, they are generally very pleasant: at least, so it was with our party; even the wounded of

them were occasionally mirthful, and as we trudged along swiftly after our party, peal after peal of unrestrained laughter echoed through the glen. What seemed most to tickle their fancy was my successful "hurrah!" Nearly all of them attempted to imitate it. Some sounded it "whorrii," others "howree," "wharrah," &c.; and as each heard the failure of the other, I was urgently requested to "mowno ma," that is, "shout again." Thus my English war-whoop became a decided favourite; for I heard even the boys endeavouring to imitate it several days afterwards.

By the time we had descended from this wild mountain range and struck on the banks of the river, it was night. The sky was clear, and the stars made, as it were, a twilight for us. We had not the assistance of that brilliant luminary the moon, which influences the fanciful imaginations of young ladies and gentlemen at home; but we were skilfully guided by two of our men along the banks of this swift stream, by an intricate path of about two miles, to a friendly station or outpost at the opposite side of the river, which was easily forded here. Our wounded men, seven in number, were carried over, and we were all soon safe and at home in a spacious and airy house, receiving the wild congratulations of our

friends after our very fortunate and also triumphant expedition.

We were all greatly fatigued, and lay down in all manner of ways on the various mats. Lights were kept going all night: they were simply a long stick with about two feet of the head of it warped round thickly with some fibre of the cocoa-nut besmeared with a kind of resin. This was lighted and held up all the time by naked men, who relieved each other. A calabash full of cocoa-nut oil was beside each, which they used frequently to sprinkle on this torch and increase the light. This arrangement gave the scene before me great effect. The peculiarity of, as it were, the candles and candlesticks, was novel in the extreme. I made several vain efforts to go to sleep, but it was impossible, as they jabbered away the chief part of the night, resting on their backs, occasionally elevating their arms and legs in a very diverting manner, much after the method that a sturdy smiling infant takes to amuse itself when it is not inclined to sleep.

At last daylight appeared. The torches were put out, the sun rose — and so did we. The cool stream below us afforded an agreeable bath to all, and apparently sharpened the appetites of most of our party,

as shortly afterwards a bountiful supply of roast pork, yams, plantain, &c. quickly disappeared.

There were only two canoes at this station. This barely answered the purpose of transporting our wounded friends easily by water, so that the rest of us were obliged to continue our march over the most uneven ground that I had yet seen here. It was thickly strewed with sharp broken rocks and old lava. The appearance of our procession was, if not interesting, at least curious. The men were mostly naked, and their dark skins glistened in the sun: the red and yellow paint streaks on their bodies was finely grained off from the contact of the bushes. They had only a few spears and their bows with them: their arrows were all left in the ravine where we made a stand against the enemy.

As for me, my jacket was tied round the wounded arm of the chief, my cap I lost in the skirmish, and my canvass (go-ashore-among-savages) trowsers had lost a leg in the thicket; so that, if the thing was possible, to have been transported, as we then appeared, to one of the great lion rooms of London, the natives would have been not a little astonished to see us.

In this manner we were rapidly advancing into a very wild-looking district, that was inhabited by a

friendly tribe. Two smart runners were already sent in advance to announce our approach and ensure an hospitable reception. Swell after swell of hills and rocks were passed over. The vegetation here was scanty; there was no shade in our route, and I began to feel uneasy effects from the heat of the sun on my bare head. Rownaa perceived this, and instantly made a substitute for my lost cap, by platting a kind of wreath with small vines, and inserting amongst the plats a number of broad leaves. It was very agreeable to me, and answered the purpose well.

Having passed the last range of high ground, a ravine or deep valley of highly romantic beauty was presented to our view. It was walled in on either side by a range of perpendicular granite rocks, from eight hundred to a thousand feet high. Their summits were fringed along with stunted shrubs and fern. The valley at the upper entrance, where we entered, was about half a mile wide, and, gradually sloping and expanding its surface for about three miles, it opened on the beach, and afforded a fine sea view. The earth, or rather fine mould, of this place was very rich, and threw up a most luxuriant vegetation. It was also well watered by a clear

rapid stream that issued from a huge cavern at the upper extremity of the valley.

The houses of this tribe were numerous, and scattered here and there under the shade of large trees and along the margin of the stream. None of them were excavated, or plastered over with mud; they were all above ground, thatched with cocoa-nut leaves, and had a very pretty aspect. From the great height of the rock range that inclosed it, I thought the heat of the place must be great, but I was deceived in this, as the sea breeze swept up through it during the day and the land winds puffed down all night, so that it was refreshingly cool at all times. The numerous inhabitants of this strange valley seemed quite at their ease, and free from any apprehension of attack from any neighbouring tribe, as their valley was protected by nature, and exposed only at the upper entrance, where four strongly-built and mud-covered guard-houses, well manned, effectually kept off unwelcome intruders.

On our arrival amongst the houses or town, we were not received by a lord mayor and a host of civic authorities, as our naval and military officers are at home after a successful expedition, but we were most noisily welcomed by the entire population, men, women, and children, who had turned

out for the purpose. In the midst of the uproar Rownaa urged me to "shout again;" so I gave them "Hurrah!" three times, to the perfect satisfaction of my friend, the amazement of many, and admiration of all. We were soon comfortably billeted about on the inhabitants.

I could not but admire the natural kindness of these people to the wounded men. Their wounds were uncovered and bathed in the most gentle manner by the women; soothing herbs applicable for such purposes were quickly collected, damped with cold spring water, and applied gently to the part, to the evident ease and gratification of the men, who were then rested, as their inclination dictated, on a soft bed of newly-pulled grass covered over with fine mattings.

A succession of the "Kurinaa," or "dance," was kept up at every house. The performance was comical in the extreme. About six or eight men, with joined hands, would form a circle round a young woman, who sat in the centre keeping time by energetically clapping her hands. The men sang wildly the whole time, — jumping high from the ground as they went round. This was only varied by hopping round now and then on one leg with the other stretched off behind them. However, there

appeared to be no confusion, the dance went off with perfect regularity.

The young women had also their dances, and what they said and sang during the performance must have been highly amusing to the crowd of people who encircled them. They all had on head-dresses formed of newly plucked leaves and scented herbs; a small fine mat covered them from the waist to their knees. Their action was graceful in the extreme, at times; at others, so exceedingly indelicate, that I shall say nothing more about it.

One great peculiarity attends this dance. The maid and the matron, those that had husbands, and those that had none, equally joined in it. It was a free time, a kind of jubilee with them, as they were at perfect liberty to say any thing they pleased with impunity, to deal out affectionate praise on the young men they loved, or abuse on the annoying suitors they disliked. What seemed to cause the greatest mirth amongst the admiring crowd was the energy that elderly women used in vieing with the younger in the dance; each pouring a torrent of abuse on her lord and master who might be observed making his escape out of the crowd, amidst roars of laughter, in the vain hope that his absence would stop her. However, the tirade was almost certain

to be continued, the lady raking up the most trivial grievances, until she felt inwardly satisfied of having unburthened herself and exposed him thoroughly.

This strange custom is periodically got up, and, after the dance is over, forgiveness is the order of the day: the man and woman living as happily together as if she had said nothing abusive, and he had been the best fellow in the world. It serves, as it were, as a kind of wiping-out of old scores, to begin in the new again, and is not without its use, as it sometimes acts in checking the inattentive habits of truant husbands; but I am sorry to add there are some reckless fellows here, who cared nothing for an hour or so of abuse during the dance,— seemed to enjoy the thing as well as any of the disinterested spectators, and kept up the fun by frequently refreshing the ladies' memory. Altogether it was a good native opera, parts of which were of a very diverting kind, given with great animation and humorous effect. The scolding scenes were natural in the extreme, and unceasingly amusing.

Our party rested in this valley for three days, during which time I occupied every moment of the day in search of the curious. I was particularly struck with the great variety of the vegetation in this district, and enjoyed an opportunity of testing

the practical botanical knowledge of the natives: they perfectly knew the use of every plant and shrub, whether it were for food or medicinal purposes; neither did they require the flower of the plant to make sure of it; a single leaf, or even a leafless stem above ground, sufficed to inform them on the subject. I could not avoid contrasting this with the theoretic knowledge of some of our professed botanists at home, some of whom I have seen at a complete stand, and undecided, when the flower was wanting.

Natives, in almost all the islands in the Pacific, are taught from their infancy to know the plants and their respective uses or virtues: from the slightest indication, they are never at fault. Land one of them on an uninhabited island, and he will soon light his own fire, and find something to eat, where a man who had been reared up in a city would hold up his hands in despair, and not even know the indications that would lead him to a pool or stream of fresh water to quench his thirst. I often thought what a dilemma a wealthy citizen, who had never been from convenient hail of the butchers, bakers, and vegetable market, would be in, thus situated! His wealth would avail him nought, and he would die from actual ignorance of even the

practical botanical knowledge that his cook possessed: for it is an acknowledged fact that thousands of people eat vegetables that have never seen them growing, and do not know the difference between a turnip and carrot top.

CHAPTER II.

HEATHENISM IN NEW IRELAND. — HUGE IMAGES. — THEIR LUDICROUS ASPECT. — OFFERINGS TO THE IDOLS. — NATIVE METHOD OF BURIAL. — FISH IN THE RIVERS. — WE EMBARK IN CANOES. — PADDLE ALONG SHORE BY NIGHT. — PASS THE BAY OF A HOSTILE TRIBE. — OUR DIFFICULTIES. — WE ARE ATTACKED BY A LARGE BODY OF THE ENEMY IN CANOES. — A SAVAGE SEA-FIGHT. — OUR DANGEROUS SITUATION. — BRAVERY OF OUR PARTY. — THE ENEMY BEATEN OFF. — OUR LOSS. — PROCEED ON. — CANOES FORM FUNERAL ORDER. — THE WILD DEATH YELL. — I ARRIVE AGAIN ON BOARD THE HOUND. — MY GARMENTS.

HEATHENISM here had also a peculiarity. "Kannua," their great god, was represented by huge images of about ten feet high, made of hard wood and polished. As usual with these figures in the Pacific, the arms were placed a-kimbo resting on the haunches; the legs were also curved inwards, and what may be termed bandy, bringing the uncouth feet in close contact, and resting on a large block of wood. The head was large in proportion to the figure; two large eyes, made by the insertion of polished oyster-shells, in the centre of which was

inserted a bit of woods tained black, to answer for the pupil; a large mouth extending open from ear to ear, displaying a range of red pegs as a substitute for teeth. The curve of the mouth, with sundry furrows and carvings about it, gave an expression of laughter to the face, and drollery to the entire image, that no one could for a moment gaze on without smiling.

The locality chosen for the erection of these idols was an eminence in the deep recesses of a dark wood, the cleft of a rock in a high mountain, or the entrance of some large cave; but in all cases they were mysteriously concealed by surrounding trees and shrubs, and few of them could be seen until you entered the thicket, and stood within ten yards or so of the figure. They are always placed either on a rock, or a mound of stones gathered for the purpose: looked like sentinels on guard, and seemed well contented with their situation, as they were invariably laughing at the surrounding scene.

Some of them had been evidently placed in their respective stations a long time, as green patches of moss had grown on them, and not unfrequently a wild vine, or creeper, had entwined itself round the limbs, body, and neck, throwing out a bush or shade from either shoulder: others were inclined to one

side; some forward, making a bow to the visitors; while two that I saw, had fallen down, and lay at the foot of the mound in the most comical positions. One on his back, two thin legs and one eye wanting; the other on his side, both arms off, head about two yards from the body, upright, facing us, and grinning at my guides, who were laughing heartily at its luckless position. These fallen images had every symptom of neglect about them; they were seldom visited by the natives, and the rapid growth of vegetable matter about would soon cover them altogether.

Whenever an idol falls, and is broken or damaged, the natives consider him not worth another visit; and say, that as he cannot any longer keep himself up, his intercession with the great "Kannua" would be good for nothing; so they let him lie there, and put up another. The act of going to war or returning from it, sickness or death in a family, are times and seasons when offerings are made to these idols. They consist of wild hogs, land and sea fowl, rare insects, &c. These are killed, brought to the open area in front of the image, and thrown on the ground before him, for his special use and gratification.

There is something pitiable, yet extremely humourous, in their mode of presenting these offerings: they

hold whatever it may be up to it—this representative of Kannua — speak to it for a little, mentioning the cause of the offering, and asking in a loud voice "Will that do?" If matters should go on well, and the suppliant not a lazy fellow, he may bring something more at another time, to proclaim his gratitude and confidence in this piece of wood. However, they seldom take the trouble to go more than once.

As may be imagined, these repeated offerings, and the decomposition of dead animal matter, make the atmosphere that surrounds this idol anything but pleasant; and he has only one consolation in his isolated position, and that is, he is never without company, as flocks of carrion birds, swarms of large flies, and countless lizards throng around him. Small handy images of only a few inches in length are not unfrequent amongst the villages, but they seemed to be considered more as a play-toy than any thing else, for I saw the children amusing themselves in the most irreverent manner.

They have particular cemeteries: each family chooses their own burial-ground, which is generally in the most lonely and unfrequented spots. The dead are encased in three or four folds of stout mattings, and deposited in an excavated hole, about three

feet from the surface; the mound of earth that is made by the filling in of the grave is generally ornamented with a few spears, arrows, &c. I had an opportunity of witnessing three funeral processions here, and could not remark any indication of deep sorrow amongst them.

On leaving the precincts of the houses, at any marked turn in the path, or on the summit of any rise of ground they passed over, a wild chorus of screaming yells burst from them all, and echoed for a moment along the surrounding hills. As soon as the body was placed in the hole, in the sitting position, the chief part of the assemblage formed a merry procession home again, with the most philosophical indifference to grief, leaving the friends of the party to cover the body and ornament the grave as they pleased.

The reverberation of sound in this valley was novel to me. If I fired off my gun on the beach at the foot of it, the wall of hills on either side would concentrate the report, and so magnify it, that shot after shot could be heard as if a twenty-four pounder had been discharged, and continuing on up between the hilly range, until it would escape at the head of the ravine, with a final and tremendous crack. A loud shout would also be carried far up, and it seemed to

be a source of considerable fun to these people, to amuse themselves with this unusual echo.

The chief supply of fish used by the natives was procured in the rivers and creeks at night. A kind of large torch was held a few feet above the water, and as the light attracted the fish to the surface, they were secured by either a barbed spear, or a hand net, fitted on a hoop in the same manner as our trout and salmon landing nets are. The fish are abundant, and captured in great numbers; occasionally a stray shark intrudes himself into the rivers, but he is almost certain of being taken, as he cannot cruise about in the limpid stream without being soon discovered; he gets surrounded by the natives, who salute him with a shower of spears, and these being all barbed he cannot shake them out, and quickly, amidst great noise and uproar, falls a victim to his rash intrusion. The natives make use of the skin when dried to polish their spears, clubs, idols, &c., and it is an excellent substitute for sand or glass paper.

The wounded men of ours had recovered so well as to bear removal; but as to returning again by the overland route, the thing was impracticable, and it was at last determined the whole of our party should go round to Boolooma's bay by water, a distance of seven leagues. This arrangement pleased

me much, as it would have been any thing but comfortable to be marching through thickets, over hills and rocks, under a burning sun, in the trim I was reduced to.

A number of canoes, capable of containing five or six men each, were at our service; these vessels were stout and safe enough in smooth water, but as we had to pass over a portion of the sea which rose in considerable swells, and was also agitated by fresh breezes and currents, it was necessary, in order to avoid a capsize, either to attach an additional outrigger to each, or lash them together, by laying a pole across, both on the bows and at the stern, and thus making a kind of double canoe, each about three feet apart from the other, allowing fair room between them for using the paddle.

This last-mentioned plan we adopted, and found it afterwards to work well in passing over the rough sea we had to encounter. Between our friend's bay and that of Boolooma, there was located a hostile tribe, and one that, by all accounts, was habitually guilty of every kind of treachery and hostility to our friends, both on land and water. In going round by sea we had to paddle across the mouth of their bay, and, in order to avoid an unpleasant affair with our mere handful of men, it was determined to start in

the evening, so that their locality might be passed at night, when the darkness would screen us from observation.

A sufficient supply of roast pork, yams, &c., with fresh water in calabashes, was stowed in the canoes. A goodly array of clubs, spears, arrows, &c., was placed at our disposal. Having thus equipped ourselves satisfactorily, we launched our native fleet shortly before sunset, rounded the first headland or bluff in gallant style, and then kept right along shore in a south-easterly direction, at about two miles off the land. In consequence of current ripples and occasional heavy swells tumbling in towards the land, we were frequently obliged to keep either closer in or more off shore.

The view from the water was finely enriched by the dense though gloomy-looking woods covering the earth everywhere, and the lofty rugged mountains of the interior, with their dark outline, giving a defined and elevated appearance to the landscape. The rocks were bold and high, and we could hear the surf breaking against them with the heavy report of loud thunder.

The setting sun threw a florid glare over our party. As they energetically "yahee'd" or paddled along, the naked figures and wildly excited faces of the men

gave them a savage and demon-like appearance. The canoes were forced along in good style, yet had great difficulties to encounter at times from the strength of the current that was rippling the surface of the water and causing a kind of bubbling sea, that not unfrequently splashed over the gunwales of our small vessels, and compelled us to keep one hand baling out. However, the chief difficulty or danger was in passing the mouth of the valley in which the hostile tribe lived, and in consequence of the current, swell, &c., causing unexpected obstacles, it was day-dawn before we rounded the promontory of land that exposed us to their view.

As far as the first look into the bay informed us, we were unseen, and we continued our course across as fast as the tumbling swell permitted, with silent energy. The mouth of either side of this bay was guarded by a high bluff of land, extending out some way, and the exertions of the men were redoubled to gain the cover of the opposite one before the clear daylight should unveil us to observation. As we approached the opposite headland the water became smoother, and, not seeing any thing of a hostile appearance, we kept closer, in order to shorten the distance.

A heavy shower of thick rain began to patter and

bubble the water all around us, which so obscured every thing, that some of our party were invisible to the rest, and had, occasionally, to signal by shouting, to keep together as we passed along. The rain, which descended so thickly, had exhausted itself and ceased, leaving us a clear sky and view in every direction. We found ourselves close in with the land, at the extreme point of the last bluff; and, on looking astern, or rather on our quarter, we discerned, about half a mile off, a great many canoes with armed natives, shooting out from the recesses of the rocks and forming in chace of us.

The critical time had now arrived. The strength of the men was taxed severely in endeavouring to keep the advance for a while longer, and the paddles were so rapidly and athletically handled, that the spray flew about us in glittering showers. Our efforts were successful with the party astern of us, and they now followed only slowly; but, to our dismay, our attention had to be quickly directed to a large batch of canoes that had, unseen by us, shoved off from the land and were ranged ahead of us, at a distance of not more than two hundred yards, evidently with the intention of cutting us off. Our paddles now ceased to ply, that the men might arrange their arms for defence against the

attack of this new force; which, in canoes and men, was double our number.

At this point there was scarcely any swell, and, when the paddles ceased, the surface of the water exhibited a shiningly smooth appearance. Our party were not only fatigued from pulling so far, but their limbs were stiffened much from being long cramped up in the canoe; so, having first placed their weapons to their satisfaction, they occupied themselves in stretching out their legs, rubbing them with their hands, and kicking them about, so as to bring them to their accustomed suppleness. With respect to our enemies, they seemed to act with indecision, were trifling away time in the arrangement of their clubs and spears, and advancing but slowly.

The scene was one of great novelty and worthy of close observation, but rather unpleasant to be so near or a participator in. As matters now stood, I deemed it but fair to look out for myself; accordingly I unrolled my gun from sundry folds of matting that had so far preserved it from the rain and spray during our passage, and, having carefully examined and loaded it, I sat down again in the canoe to watch what was going forward. There seemed to be no trace of fear in the expression of our men, yet they seemed anxious about the great numbers we had to escape from,

perhaps contend with. As the others made a stop, we altered our course more seaward, and again plied our paddles, which increased our distance a little from them.

Seeing this movement, the canoes of the enemy formed in tiers and commenced a rapid chace after us, and very quickly closed on our party to within what may be called short range. A flight of arrows now sailed through the air and dropped here and there around us without doing any injury. We kept our paddles at work, and the next discharge of arrows fell short of us, but a third wounded severely two of our party. It was now evident that our fatigued men could not make the great exertion necessary to escape without a skirmish with their opponents, so they quietly layed down their paddles and handled their weapons of defence like men who were determined to fight for their lives.

Another flight of arrows, and another of our party hurt. The compliment was now returned, followed by a deafening yell of defiance. We saw several of the enemy fall, writhing in their canoes with our barbed arrows fast in them. Still they advanced on us to within a short distance, and the rapid discharging of arrows became general. A few of them stuck in the canoe that I was in, and one wounded my

friend Rownaa in the left arm. We were now seriously situated, as there were great odds against us, and they kept a few spare hands to urge forward the canoes: if they once closed in and surrounded us, the chance for the lives of any of our small party was doubtful in the extreme. I considered it would be safer for myself to delay no longer my interference.

Our opponents were at this time in a close body, not more than forty yards off, the most of their men standing up in their canoes, rapidly discharging their arrows at us. I signed to the men to shove the canoe I was in clear of the rest; and, having lifted my gun, to their inexpressible delight, I took deliberate aim at the most forward of the party, and fired, first one barrel, then the other. As there was no time to lose, I kept on loading and firing as fast as I could, without observing the effects of my shots. Indeed, it grieved me afterwards to think I used such a death-dealing weapon with so much earnestness; but I acquitted myself in some measure by the reflection that my life and that of every one with me was in imminent jeopardy, — that we were only defending ourselves, — and that no matter how long the most serious and thoughtful man may delay firing his first shot, when that is over, and, as Jonathan

curiously expresses it; "his dander's up," he thinks no more, but acts.

Well, as I said, I did not take time to observe the effects of the repeated discharges from my gun, some of which were designedly blank, thinking the report would do as well; but the warriors composing my party were not so, they acted like a set of children about a toy-cannon, giving a round of wild, but cheerful yells, after each shot. At last I let the smoke clear completely away to have a look, and observed, with unfeigned delight and to my great ease, that our enemy were huddled together in great confusion and endeavouring to paddle off on shore out of the way. Our men, with vengeful ferocity, followed a short distance, but as the first party we encountered were moving towards us, a general and final discharge of arrows was directed amongst our late opponents, and a deafening yell terminated the affair.

The bows and arrows were now stowed away, the paddles dexterously and merrily handled, and the canoes were darting forward on our homeward course with pleasant swiftness. The natives were greatly rejoiced at having escaped so well from those we had encountered, and they prided themselves no little on their prowess, as it was a long time since

any of them ventured across the dangerous vicinity of these hostile people. I was informed it was only six months previously that a dozen of men made the attempt, were captured, and served up at a cannabalistic entertainment!

The groans of some of our poor fellows who were wounded badly, was truly painful to listen to: three of them expired before long. And then we formed a kind of funeral procession, the canoes in a line one after the other, and as we passed each headland, high bluff, or remarkable recesses in the rocks, a wild yell was given by all, and followed for a few minutes by a low monotonous chaunt, striking time to it with the blades of their paddles against the sides of the canoes, creating a loud clattering noise. This part of the ceremony was a sort of death appeal to Kannua, whose representative (an image of the kind I have described) was placed in these remarkable places by the natives, some of them being in view of us as we passed along. At last we rounded the prominent headland of our own bay and entered it, a final and piercing yell was given, and then they paddled along towards the beach in dead silence.

The canoe I was in, was separated from the rest and directed towards the Hound, where I soon received the welcome and hospitality of my friend

Captain Trainer, who, after closely scanning me from the head to the feet, with a peculiarly comical grin, burst out into a fit of laughter, in which he was joined by others present. Indeed, it was no wonder, as my torn garments, and the substitute for a cap that, literally, crowned my head, gave me a very droll appearance. My friend Rownaa accompanied me on board, and was soon in earnest conversation with his worthy parent Boolooma.

CHAPTER III.

THE NATIVES BEGIN THIEVING. — THE KING'S CONDUCT. — A SCOLDING MATCH. — CONFUSION IN BOOLOOMA'S TRIBE. — NATIVE BATTLE ON THE BEACH. — WE SAIL FROM THIS BAY. — ANCHOR IN SEVERAL BAYS MORE TO THE NORTH-WESTWARD. — HOSTILITY OF THE NATIVES. — ANCHOR IN A BAY AT THE NORTHERN PART OF THE ISLAND. — NATIVES SURROUND THE VESSEL. — THEIR DARING. — WE ARE COMPELLED TO FIRE ON THEM. — ISLAND OF NEW HANOVER. — LIGHTNING, THUNDER, AND HEAVY RAINS. — A TYPHOON. — FINE WEATHER AGAIN. — STEER FOR THE WESTERN SIDE OF NEW HANOVER. — CURRENTS, SEAWEED, &C. — APPEARANCE OF THE ISLAND. — RUN INTO A BAY, CALLED WATTOO. — ANCHOR. — CANOES ARRIVE ABOUT THE HOUND. — THE NATIVES.

MATTERS had not gone on smoothly since I left; the natives began to be troublesome, were snatching at, and thieving every thing they could lay their hands on; even the monarch (Boolooma) took part in these proceedings, and when the captain quietly checked him for it, he would only get into a great rage, shout and jump on the deck like a madman, and our interpreter not being able to diplomatise fairly between this king and his visitors, advised us to leave this bay and try another, as any intercourse

further with these people would only bring on unpleasant hostilities. Indeed, Boolooma at last became so excessively annoying and overbearing, that he was one morning politely handed into his state canoe and signed to be off.

Rownaa seemed to blame his indiscreet thieving father much, and it was a matter of unusual merriment to our crew to witness the scolding match that took place between them before they shoved off from the vessel's side. The poor young man was grateful to us for the presents we gave him, but sadly dejected at his parent's conduct. After Boolooma's expulsion from the vessel, we had little intercourse with his people. Shortly after his leaving us a kind of civil war broke out in his district, several chiefs were contending for superiority, and the people were all involved in the tumult. At first there was agitation, and processions, huge bonfires, and much noise; then, there were casual blows dealt out by the most irritable; and, finally, there was a tremendous uproar and a grand battle with clubs and spears on the open beach; which last we viewed in perfect safety from our boats that were pulled close in on purpose.

Our interpreter was frequently on shore, and brought us off all the details, which were highly

amusing to hear. At last the most cunning and numerous party remained triumphant, the greatest fools and the minority were crushed, their houses either burnt down or given to others, and themselves hunted for their lives out of the district. The thing that seemed most peculiar to me was the fact, that no matter how the chiefs or people who joined them fought, or who conquered, it was a matter of indifference to Boolooma, as the royal family are all tabooed or sacred, and neither their persons or prerogative are injured or influenced by such volcanoes amongst their subjects.

The necessary repairs to the vessel and rigging having been completed, the interpreter was landed, the anchors hove up, and we stood on out of this bay, along the land in a north-westerly direction. For some days the weather was very changeable, and we experienced some smart squalls, with heavy showers of rain, which obliged us frequently to haul off the land, and keep a good offing. Several times we were becalmed close in shore, and had to lower the two boats to tow the vessel clear of the ground swell.

We ran in several times, and dropt our anchor in bays and roadsteads, to trade with the natives, but not having the advantage of an interpreter, our visits

were sometimes misconstrued, and every indication of hostility shown to us. Once, near the most northern part of this island, we ran too close in, got embayed, and becalmed. The natives quickly surrounded us in their canoes, and discharged so many arrows, with such rapidity, at the vessel, that they were sticking in dozens in the masts, bowsprit, and hull, and two of our men were severely hurt.

Trainer could not submit to this state of things any longer, as no man was safe on deck, so he fired two rounds of grape at the most daring body of them, which caused some of the canoes to capsize, and the remainder to paddle away as fast as they could to the shore. When we got fairly rid of this attacking party the arrows were all collected, and, what was scattered about the deck, with those sticking in various parts of the vessel, numbered over a hundred. There were many more also floating about the vessel, so that it was surprising how we escaped as well as we did, before their audacity forced us to use our carronades.

Our course now led us past the north-western extremity of New Ireland, over towards another island of considerable extent, called New Hanover; it was our intention to run close in to the land at its easternmost part, but the sky suddenly darkened,

looked ominously threatening, the breeze died away, and left us in a dead calm, about five leagues off the north-easternmost point of the island.

About midnight the rain began to patter on the deck in heavy drops, the glaring red lightning seemed as it were to rend, or split down, the dark masses of clouds, and the artillery of the air thundered around us with a continued and deafening roar. The sperm whale, black fish, &c., which, two hours before were sporting on the surface and leaving their fiery wake through the phosphorescent sea, were now still, and sought quietude in the depth of the water. A few sea-fowl flew over the vessel, screaming, towards the land for protection or shelter.

We took warning from all these angry indications, furled all our light-sails, reefed the heavy ones, housed in the flying-jib-boom, and struck top-gallant-masts, in fact, making every thing lower, and aloft snug, and ready for any puff of wind that might dart from any point of the black darkness that enshrouded us. In about an hour the swell began to make heavily, and, our otherwise comfortable vessel, rolled so much, that a few large pumpkins, which we had slung up about the rigging, broke their lashings and came tumbling down, and those that escaped being knocked into smash by the fall, rolled

fore and aft about the deck, striking the shins of some of the men, to the no small amusement of the rest.

However, this merriment was soon silenced by the torrents of rain that descended right down on us, in such quantities, that the ports on both starboard and larboard sides had to be flung open to let it quickly off the deck. After the clouds became exhausted, in drenching us in this manner for some time, a clap of thunder rattled over our heads and loudly proclaimed "No more for you at present."

A rent in the darkness, exhibiting a patch of clear sky to the eastward, told us at once where the breeze was breaking through; and, a rapidly approaching hissing, crackling sound, that it was coming with force and close to us. The fore-staysail filled and bagged out, the wind increased, and performed some very respectable pieces of music (some of them altogether new) through our rigging and ropes, as if we were only an Æolian harp, placed in this predicament for the special amusement of some spirits of the air, who might be imagined to have lately discharged in mere wantonness the heavy guns with which we were at first saluted.

"Pleasant music this?" said Trainer. "Very enchanting," said I. "How do you head?" said my

friend to the steersman. "West by north, sir." "Well, keep her so." "Ay, ay, sir." Our worthy captain watched steadily the coming squall for a few minutes with a true seaman's eye. "Another hand to the wheel here." "Ay, ay, sir." "Now we have it. Hold on every one fore and aft," was the last order given. The wind struck us with great violence, and seemed to lift up the stern of the vessel as it passed on. The bows were driven like a wedge into the sea, and the vessel trembled under the shock. Her head was gradually raised out of the water to its accustomed height, and away she flew over a foaming sea right before the hurricane.

As we had now nearly the whole force of it, and a clear view before us, the captain's mind seemed more at ease, and he jocularly shouted "The Hound is off now in earnest. I'm bless'd if we won't have a sharp hunt of it." His words were literally fulfilled, for we scudded, that is ran, before the hurricane for nearly five hours, through a perfect bed of foam, on a sea that was pressed flat or level by the great force of the wind.

At last the sun rose, the haze cleared off the water, the storm gradually abated, flying fish were springing out of the water about us, the golden yellow hue of the dolphin glittered as he bolted after them; beauti-

fully speckled haglets fluttered in our wake, and a few small whales showed themselves close to leeward of us, spouting the brush of water from their nose ends, and as it were, saying to us "How do you feel after that?" Well, in answer to this supposed salutation of our companions of the deep, I must say we felt now greatly relieved, all well, and safe, and, the thoughful part of the crew thankful to Providence for his protection. Owing to the judicious precautions taken, the vessel and rigging escaped without any damage, save that which might be expected from the straining caused by the rolling motion in scudding. However, we did not care a fig for this; a few hours' work, with a light-hearted crew, set all "ship shape" again.

Having taken the necessary observations to determine our true position, we found out that the Hound had put on the "seven-league boots," as the difference of longitude made during the gale was unusually great for the time; but that was partly accounted for by discovering we were all the time in a strong current that set smartly to the westward, and now was sweeping round in a southerly direction. As I said before, the wind abated to a fresh good working breeze, and our course was altered to south by west. Before sun-down, the high land of the western ex-

tremity of New Hanover was again in sight. The true bearings of it being taken, we ran a few miles further, and hove to for the night.

Towards the latter part of the day, whilst sailing in the line of current, we encountered such dense patches of seaweed, that it looked like a great swamp or weedy marsh, we were forcing our way through; and not unfrequently the men had to use boathooks, poles, &c. to disengage beds of it from the bows and cut-water. It gave the surface of the sea so smooth and unusual an appearance, that the captain caused the operation of sounding to be performed now and then, to make sure of the depth of water under us. Large pieces of old drift wood, on which were perched many sea-fowl, were mixed up with it and gave additional novelty to its appearance.

At daylight next morning the sails of the vessel were again filled with the breeze, and as we neared the land, the seaweed grew thinner, the force of the current less. In fact, the range of it did not extend close in shore, and we gradually sailed out of its influence; but as we closed in with the island, the swell appeared greater, huge rollers reared themselves up and passed on towards it in rapid succession. This western side of New Hanover appeared to be bold and rocky; the interior, to be high and mountain-

ous. By the aid of our telescopes we could distinctly perceive that it was covered over densely with trees and brushwood of various kinds.

As there was a stiff breeze blowing, and the vessel perfectly under control, we ventured close in, in order to ascertain if there was any inlet or harbour to run into with safety; but, every where there appeared to be a rugged barrier of rocks, against which the swell burst with a roaring noise, sending clouds of glittering spray high in the air. We held on along the land in a southerly direction, and in the afternoon came abreast of some bluffs and high promontories that looked like the entrance to inlets or bays.

Just towards the most promising one we pointed the schooner, a heavy swell accompanying us. At last we were fairly embayed, and on a fine sheet of water running deep into the land. The wind here veered round the high bluffs and caused it to be changeable, high rocks showed themselves here and there above water, but leaving plenty of room to work the vessel safely through them. However, to make matters sure, two men who could be depended on were stationed at the mast-heads to look-out and con, or direct the course of the vessel. As we sailed further in the passage became narrower, and finally

determined its breadth by two huge rocks, which were of considerable elevation, frowned darkly on the water under them, and appeared like two gigantic sentinels placed there to guard this passage.

Between these rocks we steered, and after having passed, a small horse-shoe formed bay expanded itself before us in great beauty. We had scarcely entered this place, where the water was quite smooth, when crowds of natives began to assemble on the beach and watch our motions with evident earnestness. The hand-lead was now kept going to ascertain true soundings, and, after a while, the anchor was let go in twelve fathoms of water, abreast of the beach where the people were assembling, at about a quarter of a mile from the shore. When they ascertained that we were fast and stationary, a few long canoes were shoved off, which, as they neared us, were found to be nearly the same as those in use at the adjoining island of New Ireland, made out of the trunk of a single tree, and having an outrigger. Some of them were of great length.

The natives now to be seen were the same naked, black-skinned, woolly-headed set, that we had last parted from. The sound of their language differed from that in use among some of the tribes at the eastern end of New Ireland, and they approached us

with great caution, and all armed with spears, bows and arrows, evidently reconnoitreing our size and equipment with great earnestness. At last they came closer and increased their numbers so much, that, considering evening was drawing on, and our embayed position, the captain deemed it advisable to get rid of them before night.

To conciliate them, first he held up some red and blue calico to their view, and when one of the canoes came close enough, he threw some strips of it into it as a present, which was eagerly snatched up by the natives and seemed to be greatly admired. He then signed to them to go off again to the land, making them understand as well as he could that nothing more would be given that night. The fellows who got the present started off to the beach at once, making much noise all the way; others of them were so tardy, that he was obliged to frighten them away by firing a blank-cartridge from one of the carronades. This had the desired effect, for, as the report echoed around the bay, they paddled off in great confusion and apparent fear to the beach; though they had bows and arrows, spears, &c. with them, they did not handle them in an hostile manner, neither were we troubled again that night by any of them.

CHAPTER IV.

SUNRISE. — VIEW FROM THE ANCHORAGE. — KING TERU VISITS THE VESSEL. — HIS RETINUE. — A YOUNG PRINCE. — CUPID. — THE ROYAL PARTY GO ON SHORE AGAIN. — I LAND UNDER PROTECTION. — THE NATIVE TOWN. — POLYGAMY. — DANCING, MUSIC, ETC. — A FOOLISH JEST CAUSES A WAR BETWEEN US AND THE NATIVES. — DESPERATE ATTACK ON THE HOUND. — NATIVES ATTEMPT TO BOARD. — A HARD FIGHT. — SAVAGES BEATEN OFF. — ANOTHER DISASTER. — OUR VESSEL ON FIRE. — MANLY EXERTIONS OF THE CREW. — THE FIRE EXTINGUISHED.

WHEN the sun rose above the high hills the following morning, the view from the vessel was delightfully refreshing; for about two miles inland, the ground gradually sloped up to the base of a lofty range of mountains, that semicircled the low ground and defined the landscape. The vegetation everywhere appeared to be tropically luxuriant; the pandanus, palm of various kinds, cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, and other trees, covered the land in dense masses. The large bright green leaf of the plantain drooped down gracefully here and there, and patches of cleared ground, under some rude kind of cul-

tivation, forming plantations, were scattered about. Even on some elevated knolls, small staked fences could be seen, running in parallel lines, to which the yam tops were trained up, so that some kind of agriculture, however primitive, was here adopted by the natives.

On the starboard hand of our anchorage there was in the distance a large gap in the mountain range through which a rapid stream passed, and, after making a few tumbles in its course over some steep rocks, made its way into the bay over a snow-white beach, about half a mile from us. A variety of the tropical water-fowl were flying around and perched on the rocks about.

As the canoes came off early, the noise of the natives soon increased. They were gradually made to understand the object of our putting in here, and we were soon supplied with yams, plantains, bread-fruit, &c. in profusion. These were paid for liberally, which induced them to exert themselves in bringing off whatever beche-de-mar, dyewoods, &c. they had.

On the evening of the second day, we were honoured by a visit from the royal family of this district, or bay, which they called Wattoo. They were eight in number, three men and five women; and, whether they considered these lords of the

creation entitled to superior distinction from the weaker sex or not, I cannot say, but, at all events, the men were in state in an elaborately ornamented large canoe, whilst the ladies were in a small plain one, and paddled on by some of their own sex.

The three men were first on deck, one of them, a man of large frame, but great age, was the king, and called by the other two chiefs who accompanied him "Teru," his long hair was perfectly white and rested in folds on his shoulders and back of the neck; his face was besmeared with a mixture of grease and red ochre, round his neck he wore a large and bunchy necklace, or rather collar of shells, boars' tusks, and human teeth; his skin was very dark, a fold of fine matting encircled his loins, and a kind of cape of the same material was over his shoulders, which he threw off the moment he came on board.

The chiefs who came with him were small men, had their hair frizzled well out from the head, and plentifully powdered with white chalk, they had also a profusion of shell and bone ornaments on them, and both their faces were liberally streaked with white paint; as to their covering, it was as scanty as Teru's. After they had a stare at us, and we at them, they retired to the after part of the vessel, and the ladies were permitted to come up, which they did

with every ease and confidence, but were in so undressed or naked a state, that the greater part of our men involuntarily turned round, and stepped a little out of the way. They gazed around at every thing, smiled at every one in the perfect simplicity of true barbarism. The captain felt so awkward at such an exhibition of naked people on the deck among his crew, that he invited them at once down to the cabin to get them out of the way.

It was curious to observe the aged and hoary-headed Teru, handle every thing with as much curiosity as a child would a play-toy. The chiefs that were with him had more reserve, and seemed more dignified, though more ferocious in aspect. The five women, though black, were well formed and fine featured; their hair was hanging loosely on their shoulders, and made shining black with oil. They all had on necklaces of varied coloured berries. The piece of mat, which scarcely covered them from the waist to the knees, was not fastened, but merely held in one hand. In sitting down, they frequently neglected the precaution of even holding it. The king and chiefs paid little or no attention either to them or their movements, so they had all the talk to thesmelves.

Shortly after we were seated in the cabin with our

royal friends, a young prince, grandson of the king, joined the rest of the party. He was about sixteen years old, and the most animated and engaging boy that I had seen for some time. He was remarkably handsome; the colour of his hair was not altered by powdering it like the chiefs, but it was profusely oiled. He had no ornaments whatever on, but stood before us as nature formed him, perfectly unconscious of appearing before people in an almost naked state.

Every limb and muscle was continually and gracefully in motion. As for his dark, but expressive eyes, they danced in his head with rapturous delight, at every thing he saw on board our vessel. It was at once quite evident he was held in the estimation of the ladies, being as it were the Cupid of the party. They all seemed highly gratified when he leaped in among them. He had a look and a smile for each; but that once over, he amused himself with every thing that appeared new to him. His youth, manners, and movements, prepossessed all in his favour; and the old king seemed greatly pleased when he saw each of us giving him some trifling present.

What appeared to afford him most amusement was a small harmonicon I gave him,—a thing that you could get in any toy-shop for a few pence. When

presenting it to him I showed him how to sound it, and he kept it to his lips incessantly blowing away, to the no small amusement of the ladies, but finally, the annoyance of old Teru, who made him stop playing it until a more fitting time. The rest of the party were pleased with the beads, trinkets, and baubles, given to them, and were about taking leave of us, when the old king made many signs expressive of a wish to hear the noise repeated that so frightened some of his people the evening of our arrival. Accordingly, the captain ordered one of the carronades to be fired off. The report of which so astonished the whole of them, from their close proximity to the gun, that they instinctively thrust their fingers into their ears, and some fell down on the deck in affright; whilst the young fellow I have spoken of, stood leaning over the vessel's side, fixed and immovable, with mouth and eyes wide open, gazing after the smoke of the gun until it altogether vanished.

The state canoes were then hauled alongside. The women were first "bundled overboard" into their own. Then followed a perfect pantomime between our officers and the royal party. Trainer making rapid movements with his limbs and eyes, endeavouring to express his meaning, and laughing all the time heartily at his own agility. The "Cupid" took a

fancy to me, and expressively signed for me to seat myself in the large canoe beside his royal grandfather, and go on shore with them. However, I thought it prudent to be longer acquainted and find out something more about these people, before I ventured among them; so I expressed "no" to him, and, as well as I could, told him to come on board again next day after sunrise.

My young friend was punctually with me; and, after being assured, by every sign he could express himself, that I would be neither killed nor detained, I accompanied him to the shore, and no one could feel more pride than he exhibited when he acted as my friend and protector amongst his people. They were extremely hospitable in their own way. The habitations were more comfortable, and more like houses than the people of New Ireland enjoyed. The site of each dwelling was prettily and romantically chosen, and were not closely huddled together, generally on elevated mounds facing a clearing, or yam plantation, backed up and partially shaded by magnificent trees. They were all thatched with cocoa-nut leaves. The internal domestic arrangement was very simple; the floor, strewed with grass with a mat over it; logs of wood served for pillows, and the food was in calabashes, slung with cocoa-nut

fibre cords and suspended from various parts of the studded partition walls.

Polygamy was here practised to as great an extent as it is in most of the barbarous islands hereabouts. Every man had as many wives as he chose, and there was no lack of the necessaries of life for a large household, for nature and a trifling exertion in a rude kind of gardening, afforded them enough and to spare.

They appeared to be very musical and fond of dancing, as I could neither eat nor drink in any house without being favoured by such a performance before I left it. A kind of nasal fife, and a very primitive sort of drum, accompanied by several voices, were the prevailing music. The time of the sounds was regularly marked by a thump of the hand on the drum, and the dancers were punctual in their wild notions of it.

Heathenism, in much the same form as in New Ireland, is here practised. I saw only two specimens of their idols; they were similar to those I have described before, and placed also in a similar manner, in remote and secluded situations.

A considerable quantity of die-wood, and beche-de-mer had been collected; and we were on fair terms with these people until the evening of the sixth day, when a trifling occurrence caused a rupture between

us, and was well nigh the cause of losing the vessel and our lives. The circumstances were these:—

Amongst the articles the natives were giving us in trade, were some curiosities, such as carved clubs, paddles, necklaces, &c. One of the chiefs had on a remarkable quantity of shells and teeth curiously arranged in coils round his neck; it attracted the attention of the captain, who was desirous of obtaining it. The bargain was made, and the chief proceeded to undo it, but found some difficulty in loosening it: the purchaser volunteered to cut the cord, and lifted a large knife for the purpose of doing so. As all were merry and agreeable at the time, the captain was resolved to "have a joke with the chief," when, instead of cutting the cord, which he held in one hand, he raised the other with the knife in a threatening manner, as if he were about to stab the man. The native took instant alarm, thought the captain was in earnest, made a spring clear of him, which broke his necklace, and plunged overboard. A few natives, who were on deck at the time, followed his example.

Great confusion and excitement prevailed amongst the natives in the canoes about us. They yelled loudly, and threatened us with destruction by the most hideous grimaces and action of their bodies, and nearly all paddled away in haste to the shore. About

two hours afterwards, a great many canoes, some of them of large size, shoved off from the shore and were paddling towards us in a dense body. As they came nearer, we could perceive the men to be much altered in appearance by the daubs of red and white paint that were on their bodies and faces, put on, I suppose, for this hostile occasion.

They were also all armed with bows and arrows, spears, &c., and really looked very formidable as they approached us. A blank cartridge was first fired, in hopes they would take fright at it and be off; but such was not the case, for they continued to urge on their canoes with fearless audacity, discharging clouds of arrows at us when near enough. It so happened that our boarding nettings were out of order, and could not be triced up satisfactorily. The captain ordered the men to reserve the fire of the small arms for close quarters. A second blank cartridge was discharged from one of the guns, but all to no purpose, for they continued their course steadily on towards our vessel. Two of the carronades fired a ripping shower of grape, which told fearfully amongst the densely crowded canoes. The natives seemed to think they could board and take the vessel before we could again fire, for they reached towards us with

serious rapidity. Again the fatal grape streamed through them.

In a few seconds the canoes touched the vessel, and her sides, bow, and stern, were swarmed with natives striving to fight their way on board; but the rapid use of carbines, pistols, and cutlasses soon compelled them to jump into their canoes again, and, many wounded bodies to drop heavily into the water. Several of our men were severely wounded, and the rest were so enraged, that, despite all the captain could do, they kept up a fire of small arms on the natives until they escaped out of range.

We were scarcely clear of this affair, when an enemy, whose power we dreaded more than the savages, seemed to threaten us with speedy destruction. In the primary part of the attack, when the natives were approaching, the after-hatch had been removed to get up some weapons of defence that were stowed immediately under it, and, in consequence of the rapidity with which they boarded us, the open hatchway was forgotten. Between the cases and casks underneath there was a quantity of dry wood, matting, shavings, &c. placed between them, to prevent the motion of the vessel from altering their stowage. In repelling the natives, ignited gun and pistol wadding was falling about the deck, and some of it, unper-

ceived, fell down through the open hatch amongst the dry materials above mentioned.

After the men had ceased firing after the savages, puff after puff of smoke was observed to issue from the after hatchway. The attention of all was instantly directed to this. British sailors are not in the habit of bestowing much thought on any threatened danger or calamity; they generally meet trouble like men, grapple with it at once, and act with becoming and bold energy. When danger after danger is overcome, the spirit of a real Jack tar is never conquered. Let scene after scene of peril beset him, and the cheering word to his messmate will be such, as "Never say die to it, my hearty!"

It was so with us: the attacking-savages were no sooner beaten off, than they laid down their weapons to "turn to" (as they called it) "and put out the fire." The men had strict confidence in their captain, and they nimbly and boldly executed in silence the orders he gave. The gunpowder was taken out of the after-hold through the cabin, and placed on deck near the stern of the vessel, so that, if the fire should not be speedily extinguished, it might be launched into the water and prevent our getting a quick passage overboard by being blown up.

The bow pump was set to work, and all the buckets

were used in conveying water to the after-hatchway, where the flames now began to fork up. A bulk-head, or partition, which separated the hold from a sail-room in front of the cabin, was cut through, and at once disclosed where the centre of the fire was. Boathooks and poles were used to extricate some inflammable matter that was in its vicinity. The judicious application of water speedily terminated our danger, and within the space of an hour, after careful examination, not a particle of fire was on board; if we except that which was in the pipes of three or four of our disabled men, who were coolly consoling themselves smoking tobacco.

The decks were closed up and every thing soon again in order. The powder was to remain on deck where it was, for the night, properly covered with tarpauling to keep it dry. Thus ended the consequences of our captain's joke with a simple-minded, yet ferocious people, who could not comprehend it, and is one of the many instances of affrays with natives arising out of the simplest causes. Many of the vessels trading amongst the islands of the Pacific, who have not been timely enough in acting on the defensive, have been boarded in the same manner, the crews sacrificed, the ship destroyed and never more heard of.

CHAPTER V.

SAIL FROM NEW HANOVER. — RUN ALONG THE SOUTH-WESTERN SHORE OF NEW IRELAND. — APPEARANCE OF THIS SIDE OF THE ISLAND. — THE NATIVES. — SAIL FOR NEW BRITAIN. — VOLCANOES IN SIGHT. — THICK WEATHER. — FALL IN WITH WILLAUMEZ'S ISLANDS. — THE CURRENT. — DANGEROUS NAVIGATION. — LET GO THE ANCHOR. — THE HAZE CLEARS OFF. — FASCINATING VIEW FROM THE VESSEL. — CALM ANCHORAGE. — CAPTAIN TRAINER, WITH FOUR MEN AND I, LAND ON THE ISLAND TO EXAMINE IT. — CURIOUS NATURAL ARRANGEMENT OF MANGROVE BUSHES. — PROCEED INLAND. — LOVELY SCENE. — BIRDS, INSECTS, ETC. — BIRD OF PARADISE. — RETURN TO THE BOAT. — A STRANGE INHABITANT OF THE ISLAND. — HE GOES WITH US ON BOARD THE HOUND. — A DESCRIPTION OF HIM.

AT daylight next morning we got under weigh, and with the aid of a fresh breeze worked the Hound safely out of this inlet. Next sounded the south-western extremity of the island and stood along its southern shore, which, from the rocky aspect of it, was not sufficiently inviting to run close in. When off its eastern end we got in the range of a strong current which set to the northward, through the passage between it and New Ireland. Here again

seaweed showed itself in great beds; and fish, such as the albicon, bonitas, dolphin, &c. were numerous. We steered E.S.E. along the south-western shore of New Ireland, and ranged along close in with the land, which appeared in the interior to rear itself up into a long range of mountains six or seven thousand feet high.

The vegetation had not the dense luxuriant appearance of the north-eastern shore, and the land had a more broken and rocky aspect. Several times, off different bays or inlets, numbers of canoes came off; they were all of great length, indeed, not a few were nearly as long as our vessel,—outriggers were in every instance attached to them. The natives were everywhere on this side of the island perfectly naked, the hair of their heads whitened with lime, or chalk, all were ornamented with heavy shell necklaces; and, as they came alongside, we could perceive their bows and arrows, spears, &c. in the bottom of the canoes.

The natives of the various bays that paddled off to us, were in the climax of barbarism. There appeared to be some slight difference in the sound of their language, but I suppose it to be much the same which exists between the good people of the north and south of England. With all our ingenuity of

signs we could not make them comprehend us sufficiently, and, as there was no interpreter along here, we could not derive any benefit from running in and coming to an anchor, so our course was directed across the strait to the north-western end of the large island called New Britain.

As we neared the shore it appeared, also, to be very bald and rocky, and the mountains of the interior to tower up to a great height. The weather we experienced here was changeable and squally with rain, so we kept a civil distance off the land, and when becalmed, occasionally, the current, which rippled the surface of the water in all directions, took command of the Hound and seemed, as it were, to amuse itself with turning our pleasant vessel round and round; so that, in looking at the compass, one time she headed south, in a few minutes afterwards, perhaps, north, west, or east.

During the dark nights the lightning quivered over the high land, and more than once we distinctly saw volcanoes, at no great distance inland, throwing up their varied coloured flashes of light, and showers of fire descending from the craters. Many lumps of light pumice stone floated along in the current, and some specimens were lifted out of the water with a hand net.

The sea around us was fairly alive with whales, particularly those of the sperm kind; flying-fish were so abundant as to resemble, when out of the water, a flight of birds. Of course, where they are, dolphins are certain to be, and numbers of them were taken. This northern side of the island makes a deep bend or curve in, and perhaps that may in some measure account for the variable winds we experienced in running along it. When about the centre of the islands and close in with the land, the current made the navigation of our vessel a matter of anxiety, particularly as the variable breeze was not unfrequently accompanied with thick hazy weather, which for hours would conceal every thing, two miles off, from our view. Here we were, what the captain pettishly termed "humbugged," amongst a group of small islands, which, though much out of the position laid down in the chart, were, we believed, those termed "Willaumez's Islands."

It was nothing but backing and pulling through them, in the current way, something after the manner that a pilot will bring a ship up or down the Thames when favoured with a strong tide and light winds. At times, the haze would leave us in complete uncertainty how to act; then, again, the fog

would be swept away by a strong puff of wind, and display the beach or rocks close to us.

The land was covered with the most verdant and luxuriant vegetation, trees of magnificent growth, cocoa-nut, and bread-fruit trees in abundance. In fact, the islands scattered about here, though small, were perfect gardens to look at. No inhabitants appeared on any of them, although we could see a temporary hut, erected here and there by some visitors. In order to make certain of the existence of inhabitants we fired a gun, but the only answer to its loud report was a great screaming and cackling of sea-fowl, that flew about in myriads, as it were scolding us in gallant style for our intrusion in their quiet retreat.

During one of our trials to escape clear through this group to the westward, we got regularly "jammed up" between two of them, in a passage not more than half a mile wide, with many rocks very little above the surface of the water, and the tide or current "running like a sluice." This, of course, was unsafe to navigate, even with the best look-out that could be kept up. The vessel was worked over to one side of it more out of the tide-way, and a stream anchor let go which held her in her position. Shortly after getting into this passage, the haze

cleared off, the sun shone out, and we were treated with an enchanting view of the most lovely landscape that eyes could gaze upon.

Along the shores on either side there was scarcely a rock, all was a white glistening beach, composed of sand and broken shells, inside that, thick mangrove bushes; then the land would swell itself up into small hills over the islands, and covered with a dense light green forest. The water scarcely made a wash on the beach, and its line of encroachment, or high-water mark, was defined by a range of old reeds, bushes, seaweed, and drift-wood, that was deposited from the margin of the current. Nature alone worked here, the hand of man had not yet disturbed anything; and a fanciful mind might easily imagine that the time of our visit was merely the beginning of creation, or our stumbling on some fairy world, as no human form was visible except those on our deck.

Our position was an awkward one, as we had no wind to work out, and of the full strength of the tides or current we could not yet form an opinion; therefore, it was resolved to ascertain if there was any inlet near us that the vessel could lie in safety. The sails were all furled, a boat lowered, manned by its usual crew, and the captain and I got into it.

We pulled about for nearly two hours, examining the shores on either side of the strait. At last the beach became rocky and irregular, and formed several calm inlets, any of which would afford us safe and smooth anchorage in a good depth of water; and what made this part of the island particularly suited for us was, the fact of its being near the western extremity of the passage, and, whenever the wind would favour us, an hour's warping would bring the vessel out into the open sea-way, where we could take advantage of it.

We returned on board, and all hands immediately turned to, with great glee, to warp our craft along shore. The water was smooth, and the holding ground favourable for the stream anchors, and, before the sun had disappeared behind the verdant island to the westward of us, we moored, bow and stern, in ten fathoms water, at about one hundred yards from the beach, in a beautiful small horse-shoe-like-bay, perfectly calm and out of the influence of swell or current. By the time our vessel was securely fast, boat hoisted up, and decks cleared, it was nearly dark; and, although there were no signs of any inhabitants, at present, on this labyrinth of islands, we had so far escaped through safely, yet, from our known vicinity to the large island of New Britain,

they might easily pass from one to the other in their canoes, be on them, and conceal themselves from us; so the usual precautions, of tricing up the boarding nettings, and letting the men keep watch, armed, were not neglected.

We were all so glad to inhale the fragrance of the fresh herbage off the land, that most of us remained on deck enjoying it until near midnight. The mosquitos came off in numbers and annoyed some of our party a good deal; huge bats flapped about us, and some large owl's manned our yards, glaring down on the deck with their fire-balls of eyes to the no little amusement of our crew.

In the many current ripples that we were for some days forcing our way through, the drift-timber was large, and the occasionally coming in contact with it, together with twice hitting the rocks, which were concealed from our view by the fog until we were right on them, chafed our bows greatly, tore off some sheets of copper, and damaged the cut-water and fore-foot so much, that the vessel, which had been perfectly tight in all weather, began to leak a little, and actually required repair before proceeding further.

Now, if we had searched the entire Pacific for a spot of land with a calm and quiet nook like this, free from the intrusion of natives, and every way eligible

for our necessary work and repair, we could not have succeeded better than we did, as it were, blind-folded by thick weather and whirled along by the current into it. At least, so thought Captain Trainer, who determined to take every advantage of our position to repair damages and give the men a run on shore if no natives appeared. So next morning the hatches were taken off and the crew set actively to work in breaking out the after-hold and getting on deck part of the cargo and stores, that were unavoidably wet by throwing down water to put out the fire that occurred during the affray at New Hanover, and in the drying of the beche-de-mer, dye-wood, &c. The weather favoured us greatly, as a warm sun threw its heat directly on our anchorage the chief part of the day.

The captain was desirous of ascertaining whether this, or the other islands closely adjoining, were inhabited or not. With this intention, he gave the necessary instructions to his mates to continue the work, and, if we should not get back at night, to keep a strict watch on board. So he and I, with four of the crew, all well armed, got into the boat and started off on an exploratory excursion. We first rowed, round close to the beach of the small bay in which we had anchored, then rounded the point and pulled along shore close in for about four miles,

until we reached the southern end of this island. The shore, all this time, presented the same appearance—a broad fine sandy beach, backed up by, as it were, a thick hedge-row composed of mangrove bushes, the thickly-leaved branches of the trees behind, thrust here and there through, with a network of vines entwined through all, keeping each steadily in its place, so that the fresh breeze that was blowing alone affected the leaves, and kept them fluttering and glistening before us.

It appeared strange to me, that the vines should spring up or exist so close to the sand, or in a poor soil. However, afterwards I was not surprised, as I found, first, a range of stones along the back of the mangrove bushes, as if placed there by the hand of man, and then as rich a mould as I ever handled. This natural vegetable barrier pleased us all very much to look at; and, as the men said, "Why, this looks as if we were pulling along outside a garden." In the back ground, trees of no great height, but of luxuriantly leafy appearance, rose up on the eminences.

The southern end of the island was about two miles in extent; but, as it possessed the same appearance and had no trace of human beings, we resolved to land and have a peep into the interior. As soon as

the boat rested on the beach, we landed, leaving two men in charge of the boat, with orders if any natives or any thing strange appeared, to fire a shot and let us know. Having arrived at the mangrove range, we drew our small axes from our belts and commenced cutting our way through the bushes and vines. Trainer said, it reminded him of his younger days, when he was very much addicted to breaking his way through the hedge of an apple garden to steal the fruit.

It proved certainly a difficult task to make our way through it with the small tools we worked with, and one of the men, by awkwardly handling his axe, gapped it in two or three places, and to excuse himself, made free to tell Captain Trainer — "Blow'd, sir, if this ain't tough work." Well, we made a fair opening at last, and as soon as Trainer cast his eyes about him, he gave a loud whistle to express his amazement and delight; and no wonder, for the ground we trod on as we walked into the interior was of the richest kind, carpeted over with a rich vegetation, immense sized flowers of varied colours, and of the richest hue, reared their heads up here and there.

In ranging through this carpeted bed, we were knee-deep in it; but, what a disappointment it gave

some of the men, when they plucked some of these large tropical flowers to bring down to the boat, and found them wither in their hands a few moments after they were torn from the stem. The trees were all of the size of a large apple-tree, with few exceptions, and so far apart, and scattered about, as would lead one to imagine they had been planted there by some gardener; but I felt a deep pleasure in reflecting, that the hand of man had not polluted this lonely solitude, and that the great Creator alone was the gardener.

Parrots of the grey and green kind were very numerous, and paroquets of great beauty were resting, or fluttering and chirruping, on every small branch. Wild mustard and mint were here and there in patches. A good many large black hawks were also seen, and I brought down one of the largest and finest looking owls I ever saw, that was snugly and darkly perched in one of the trees with a perfectly thick canopy of leaves around him, and only for his legs, which were as large as a domestic cock, he would have escaped my observation. He was certainly a splendid specimen. Black centipedes were very numerous, and one that had bitten one of the men in the ankle, by being trod upon, measured fully eleven inches in length, with a back.

fully an inch and a half across; the claws in front were very formidable, and the curved legs were like horns, but they were not annoying, as they quickly got out of our way if they could. In the thick dark clumps of trees a number of bats, with bodies as large as rats, lay along the larger branches, which, when disturbed, showed an immense spread of wing; indeed, one that I managed to shoot was twenty-one inches from tip to tip of wing — an ugly but extraordinary looking specimen — the colour was crow black.

A few birds came under our observation that attracted the attention of all, and of such a kind as a true naturalist would not hesitate to go thousands of miles to see in its living state. "Watch the naked branch of that tree, see that bird" — "what plumage, what a sweeping beautiful tail!" "Watch him now as he turns" — "what magnificence!" "'Tis the bird of Paradise!" "Now let us start him: see how he goes off, and carries that tail of his." We saw two more only: Trainer shot one, and I the other. The bodies of both were torn, but we carried with us the tails as unusual trophies.

Now, a person might imagine that the island swarmed with these living things I have mentioned, but such was not the case, as those that were seen

were the result of close search and observation, whilst traversing, circuitously, over about ten miles of the island; and, with the exception of the parrots and hawks, it was only occasionally we could see any thing of the kind, but that, in a great measure, arose from the various birds, &c. concealing themselves in the trees, under cover of the foliage, from the intense heat of the sun during certain hours of the day.

Neither would I be so minute with the detail of the birds, &c. that we saw here, but that the same observations are applicable to the rest of those islands which I examined, as well as the larger island of New Britain, which they so closely join, that an enterprising man might with ease make an excursion from one to the other, as well as to the larger island I have just mentioned, in a common canoe.

As it was near night we ascended an eminence to look around, and soon discovered that we had traversed very little of the island; and as we had been now many hours from the boat, Captain Trainer thought it advisable to return, and leave the rest of the exploration for another time, so we first refreshed ourselves with a snack we carried with us, and then wound our way towards the place we left the boat. We passed several pools of fine fresh

water, occasionally quenching our thirst by a delicious draught of it; and when within about a mile of the landing heard distinctly one shot, and quickly after, another.

"Hallo," said Trainer, "something wrong at the boat, pull a-head my harties, pull a-head." And so we did, for it was now near dusk, and our moderate scrutinising walk was converted into, what soldiers call, a forced march, or rather "double quick." As we hurried along we fired two shots, to let the boat's guard know we were near. This "rate of sailing," as Trainer called it, soon brought us near the landing place. Having reloaded our guns, and prepared for any thing that might turn up, all of us peered through the barrier of mangroves, to have a look before we showed ourselves.

You may form some idea of our astonishment at beholding nothing more to dread, than our two worthy shipmates, who we left in charge of the boat, quietly seated in the stern, and, occasionally, laughing heartily with a third queer looking stranger sitting near them, the whole three occupied in a very praiseworthy manner, viz. eating their supper, or what was left for the two in the boat. The captain led the way through the breach we had cut through several hours before, and we all followed

him out on the beach to where the boat lay (by the by, in my eagerness to get through, to see who the new-comer was, the fine feathers were nearly all torn of the dead owl which hung by my belt).

Trainer was the first to speak — "What did you fire the signal shots for?"

"Whoy, sir, this here gentleman was trudging along the beach, took him for a savage, and thought there might be more on'em."

"And who are you?" said the captain.

"A friend, sir, and the only man living on this island."

"On what part of it?" said the captain.

"North end, sir; some miles further than you could have been this day."

"Will you come on board with us, I am going to shove off now as it's late?" said Trainer.

"Yes, sir, and thank you."

We all listened to this dialogue in breathless silence, and with intense curiosity, and I confess I felt a sort of mysterious awe to creep over me, as I gazed upon the form of this lone man. "Shove off, my lads." "Ay, ay, sir." And as we swept round the end of the island, and along shore, towards our anchorage, Trainer now and then threw out an

ejaculation, such as, "This is very droll!" again, ". . . . . odd!" "poor fellow!" &c. &c.

It was quite dark by the time we got alongside the Hound. The lantern having been held up, we all ascended, and as the stranger got over the side, all hands quickly assembled to have a look at him; but my friend Trainer soon put an end to their curiosity, by bringing him down to the cabin as his guest, and, indeed, ours, for we all gave him a hearty welcome and a good supper.

He was a middle sized, stout made man, of about fifty years old; his black hair was very long, but conveniently tied up in a bunch at the back of his head; his beard, also black, was of enormous growth, in fact nearly covering his face, and hanging far down on his chest. His skin, from long exposure to the sun's rays, was as brown as any Polynesian's. His costume was simple, and consisted merely of two garments, one was a pair of inexpressibles, so short that they did not extend lower than half way down the thighs, the legs having been formerly cut off, from motives of economy, to patch the rents in the most important part and keep it together as long as possible. The other portion of his dress was a piece of old canvass, scanty enough, but sufficient to cover his shoulders as a short mantle, and was made fast in

front by a sharpened piece of bone, with a knob on the end of it, something in imitation of a breast-pin. His expression of face was determined, yet open, and he gazed round at every thing in the cabin, as if he had never beheld such before. However scanty his garments were, and peculiar as his appearance was, he seemed perfectly at home, and at his ease.

As Captain Trainer could no longer restrain the ill-suppressed mirth that his general aspect excited amongst us, his humanity at once dictated the necessity of metamorphosing him somewhat, by presenting him with a check-shirt, canvass trowsers and jacket; but we all begged of the worthy captain to go no faster at present, and particularly not to interfere with his remarkable and venerable beard, which the man seemed to have no inclination to disturb, but quietly arranged it all outside the shirt, where it was suspended like a mat before him. From want of use, his language (he was a native of Bristol, England, named James Selwin,) was greatly forgotten, and he found much difficulty in remembering enough to enable him to express himself, therefore I will not bore you by repeating his half expressions, but tell his history to you in our own way.

CHAPTER VI.

A CRUSOE. — JAMES SELWIN'S HISTORY. — THE CAPTAIN AND I VISIT SELWIN'S HOUSE. — NORTH SIDE OF THE ISLAND. — SELWIN'S HOUSE AND PLANTATION. — SELWIN'S FAMILY. — OUR INTRODUCTION TO THEM. — AN ACCOUNT OF THEM. — WE ARE ENTERTAINED BY SELWIN. — A FUNNY SCENE. — FARTHER ACCOUNT OF THE ISLAND. — HOT SPRINGS. — BEAUTY OF SCENERY. — OUR RETURN TO THE BOAT. — SELWIN'S CANOE. — OUR SAILORS IN CHARGE OF THE BOAT. — RETURN TO THE HOUND.

As well as he could remember, it was nineteen or twenty years previous to our visit, that he was mate on board a large brig, called the Thomas, which I think he said belonged to Bristol; they were bound round Cape Horn, and after having disposed of their cargo at various ports in Chili and Peru, the supercargo, who was half owner of the vessel, hearing a great deal about what could be done amongst the islands of the Indian Archipelago, determined on a cruise in those seas, and fitted out accordingly in one of the ports in the western side of South America; the vessel was fully supplied

with articles generally used in trading with natives; a liberal allowance of provision was on board, additional hands were shipped, and the vessel was already well armed.

Every arrangement being completed satisfactorily, the vessel sailed westward, touching, and transacting business at the various groups of islands—the Society, the Navigators or Samoan, the Tonga, New Hebrides, New Zealand, along the shores of New Guinea, and, finally, the shores of New Britain, where we found our strange friend; their object was similar to ours, viz. picking up cocoa-nut oil, arrow-root, beche-de-mer, tortoiseshell, die-woods, or, in fact, any thing that would answer the Sandwich Islands, or China markets. They proceeded from one place to another with various success, and lost several men in different affrays with the natives, who, in some instances, they forced with powder and ball to trade with them.

At last, being so scantily handed from the repeated loss of men, they found a great difficulty and fatigue in working the brig, yet, in this crippled state, they ventured in along the north-west shore of New Britain, still endeavouring to trade with the natives; and they procured a large quantity of ambergris, which had been collected along the water's edge.

However, the currents became too powerful for the thinly-manned brig, and swept her along the land until she came abreast of the group of islands at which our vessel is now at anchor: here a river of considerable size makes its way into the sea, and here as the tide or current rushed up, it carried the ill-fated brig with it, when she soon took the rocks, and heeled over on her beam-ends; there was an end of course to the vessel, but the tribe of natives in the vicinity being conciliated by presents, and the supercargo taking the chief's daughter for a wife, a great part of the cargo was got on shore by canoes and rafts, and safely stowed away in sheds erected for the purpose, and under the chief's protection.

There were now eleven men in all, the captain, supercargo, first and second mates, carpenter, cooper, and five seamen. They had conveyed on shore a large number of the planks, spars, &c., from the brig, and were going on rapidly with a small vessel for the purpose of getting away, when, one afternoon, the captain, supercargo, and our hero, who was the mate, heard an awful uproar near at hand, and, on looking to see what was the matter, were astounded to see nearly all the men lying killed on the ground, and the natives yelling and dancing round them, brandishing their clubs. On the supercargo begging the

interference of his black father-in-law, the chief, he was at once given to understand they were all bad men, had insulted and abused his people, and, finally, had killed a woman: he put an end to all further discussion by saying they would be all eaten, and they were. On the other hand, the captain, supercargo, and our hero, the mate, were assured of their safety.

The supercargo, and part-owner of the brig, now seeing that, in consequence of the loss of the men, the small vessel they were making must remain as she was, and that all hopes of leaving this den of savages were lost, took ill and lingered for awhile: all his companions in trouble could do to raise his spirits was in vain; he died of a broken heart, and was buried close to the storehouse where the men were killed. The chief's daughter, his wife, nearly killed herself, by wounding her face, neck, and chest, with sharp shells.

All that now remained were the captain and his mate, but both being on very friendly terms with the natives and chief, they were at liberty to do as they pleased, and live wherever they chose: both men had wives, who seemed very fond of them, and after consulting together, they determined on coming out on these islands, as they would be freed

from the observation of the natives, and more likely to see any vessel that might pass; so they took a good-sized canoe, put in as many things out of the storehouse, belonging to the brig, as they could, stowed their sable wives on top of the cargo, and having previously examined each island, landed and settled on this one, it being the most eligible for their purpose, as they could enjoy an extensive sea view.

Two houses under one roof were erected sufficiently large and comfortable for the accommodation of the parties: they planted gardens; birds were plentiful, and fish in abundance; so they made themselves as contented and happy as they could under the circumstances. All went smoothly on, each occupying himself as well as he could, and still keeping a look out seaward for a chance vessel. About seven years previous to our visit, a catastrophe, as heartrending as it was tragical, occurred to one of the party; the captain being in the habit of bathing at a deep part of the beach, not far from their habitation, was one day seized by a ferocious shark, pulled into deep water, and was seen no more.

So James Selwin was now the last man of the brig, and in every sense of the word the first man on the island; perhaps, we may add, the father of an

infant colony, as he had with him his wife and three children, together with (if we may so call her) the widow of his late captain. In ending his history, Selwin jocularly remarked that, though his family were black, they were all true-born Britons: but certainly the colour of the New Britainers was somewhat darker than that of their brethren of Great Britain.

When the conversation flagged, or ended, it was painful to observe the motions of this man. At times he would be buried in silent deep reverie, then raise his body, stare wildly about at everything, and laugh involuntarily. His whole actions displayed a man that had suffered great mental excitement, and one that was habituated to some extraordinary mode of life. He said ours was the first vessel he was on board of since the brig was lost; in fact, he only saw another about five years since, from the south end of this island. She was standing to the southward; he made signals to them; but, if they saw him, they paid no attention, as the vessel stood on. He also said he had no inclination to leave this island or his colony, as he had become habituated to the wild life he led, and knew he was now fit for none other. Indeed, his appearance and manner seemed to remove him far from the range of civilisation.

Next morning, Captain Trainer being as curious

as I was to visit Selwin's house, resolved to accompany me on the excursion, and having set the hands on board to work, we got into one of the boats and started off. On leaving the bay we rowed along the shore towards the north end of the island. For about two miles the same beach and mangrove bushes showed themselves as we saw the day previously south of the bay, but after that rocks of very respectable height began to appear, and, at last, seemed to form such a barrier as to make us wonder where we could run the boat in. The current swept along here very briskly and there was scarcely any swell, consequently the surf against the rocks was nothing, so we could keep as close in as we liked.

There were vast flocks of sea-fowl perched on and hovering about these rocky eminences; the screaming noise they made was so great that we were obliged to shout to each other to be heard. "Selwin, is this far from your habitation?" said the captain. "No, Sir; not more than a mile." "All I have to say," said Trainer, "is, that it is a —— noisy neighbourhood." "Come, give way my lads, and don't be gaping at the birds." "Ay, ay, Sir," responded the boat's crew. A short distance further and there was a complete gap in the solid rock of about twenty yards wide.

"This is our landing place, my harbour, Sir," said Selwin. "Ease your starboard oars, pull your larboard ones," said the skipper, and a couple of strokes ahead and we passed over a kind of bar with about ten feet water, solid rocky bottom across. Immediately inside these rocks the water expanded into a good-sized basin, surrounded by a snow-white pebbly beach, backed up by the mangrove and other bushes. The water here was shiningly smooth; we could discern distinctly the fish moving about the bottom, and they certainly appeared to be very abundant, particularly the flat fish.

After landing the captain ordered the men to remain by the boat, and as they had lines and bait with them, they might as well amuse themselves by fishing in the pool, but not to go outside the rocks or bar. They shoved the boat off again with great glee; in a few minutes their lines were down, and before we retired from the beach they began to haul in the fish.

Selwin now led the way. We walked along the beach until we came to the end of the mangrove range, then struck in on a narrow pathway that made a tortuous course through a dense grove of cocoa-nut trees. After getting out of this the ground was tolerably clear, with the exception of a thick growth

of coarse grass, wild mint, &c. We were now in an open space surrounded by woods of the richest green. There was bread-fruit tree, the cocoa-nut, sandal-wood, &c.; and this part of the island appeared to be alive with parrots, as their continued chattering and fluttering about gave anything but silence to this solitude.

Our way led us along a small deep valley, or rather ravine, the bottom of which was filled with water, and in the shallow parts of it huge bunches of tall flaggers. I perceived a great many birds in it, occasionally diving under the water, and in nearing it my ears were saluted with the well-known quack, quack. "Are these ducks yours, Mr. Selwin?" said I. "I may say they are; they are wild, and always plenty of them here. You had better shoot a couple of them for our dinner, Sir." So with the king's permission and hint I fired amongst them, first one barrel, then the other, with effect. Whilst reloading I was amazed to see none of them take wing and endeavour to escape; they did not seem to comprehend what was the matter.

"Well," said Trainer, "them are the biggest fools of ducks I ever saw!" "I dare say, Sir," said Selwin, "it is the first shot they ever heard, and when I want any I knock them over with a stick." This

last remark of the monarch's made me shoulder my gun and not discharge it a second time at such game. Having taken out of the water the three that I had shot we moved on; they were very large and heavy, plumage scanty, but crow-black, bill and legs of a bright scarlet colour. We passed through a second grove of trees into another open space, the ground of which was undulated, and trees so scattered about in clumps as to resemble the most beautifully laid-out park. We were now two miles from where we left the boat!

Having turned off to the left of this cleared space we entered a rich grove of bread-fruit trees, and, after quickly passing through this, at once arrived at Selwin's houses and garden. What was two houses formerly, during the captain of the lost brig's sojourn on the island, was now in one. They were substantially erected, the walls of strong stakes driven firmly into the ground; the interstice was filled up (as in the erection of a log-house) with chips and mud—a process that is generally termed "stubbing;" the roof was thatched over with cocoa-nut leaves, and perfectly water-tight; the walls were about six feet high. The two houses in one were about thirty feet in length by about twelve wide, one doorway, three

openings for windows to admit air and light in the front, and three in the rear.

The trees that had been close to this habitation had been cut down, as scorpions and other troublesome insects formerly made a habit of dropping on the roof and getting into the house, to the annoyance of the inhabitants. The inside of this now large house was divided, by slender partitions, into three apartments, two sleeping, and one general mess-room. The cook-house was a small open shed outside. The beds were formed by four thick stakes or posts sunk in the floor, and crossed by a close range of flat sticks; these were covered over with a deep bed of fresh leaves, which made it neither hard nor disagreeable. A rude table was in the centre of the messroom, at which, of course, the king of the island always presided; indeed, there was a fixture of an arm-chair at one end of it, which gave the affair a very droll appearance.

The culinary department was well supplied with a goodly array of wooden vessels, bowls, calabashes, wooden platters, &c. Against the wall were resting half-a-dozen of canoe paddles, some spears, the points of which were pointed with bone, fishing lines made of cocoa-nut fibre, &c. The garden in front of this dwelling was about half an acre, carefully inclosed to

keep off some wild hogs that, it seemed, existed on this island. They were, Selwin told us, of a small kind, but would run like hounds, and were very mischievous. This plot of ground was well arranged and taken care of: on one side there was a staked fence put up, against which the stalk and branches of the yam supported itself; there were also pumpkin and melon beds, with patches of cultivated mint here and there.

On entering the house we saw at once the inhabitants had fled. At this Selwin laughed heartily; indeed, the poor fellow seemed now more himself than when he was on board with us. Perhaps his visit to our vessel awakened in him a thousand thoughts of former days that had been entombed for years: be that as it may, he was now decidedly cheerful, seemed to have forgotten our vessel altogether, and was bent upon making us as comfortable as he could during our stay.

He kept moving about the apartment, fumbling the comical table, and the chair at the ends of it, making a round of queer apologies. At last the language of the old sailor came out, and he "D——d his eyes if he had anything better." Trainer at first stared curiously at him, but at the conclusion, he fell over on one of the leafy beds, convulsed with

laughter. When he was tired of this amusement he spoke to Selwin, saying, "My good fellow, where's your family?" "O Sir, I'll soon find them; they are out, hiding." So out he started in search of them.

Trainer was lounging on one of the beds, and seemed to be buried in thought for some time: at last he said, "Well, I'm blest if I had any notion there was such an habitation as this along the shores of New Britain; as for our host he has a beard, with hair enough for a net to drag a lagoon." It may not be amiss here to mention, that Selwin considered it lost time to try and learn their "gibberish," as he termed their language; but as soon as the captain of his brig was no more, he decreed, they should all learn English from him; his was to be the language of the island.

From what we heard, it was certainly a peculiar one: the regularity (if I may say so) of his own language was nearly forgotten, but the piles of damns and curses peculiar to a maritime life were rife in his memory, and I'm sorry to say were imparted to this primitive colony, both young and old, in so impressive a manner, that in the common run of conversation with any of them, the d—— my eyes, and the rest of it, was as freely given, and as clearly uttered, as if

it came from an able seaman on board a first-rate; in fact as perfectly as Selwin could express it, and indeed that was perfect enough.

Now that he was at home, he seemed to amuse himself highly with the children's "d—— my eyes," and said they were "chips of the old block:" in point of fact, this Selwin's Christianity was at a low ebb; he could not comprehend the divinity generally, and believed only, that there was a great and mysterious spirit, which made and presided over all things, and that to him alone he ought to look up: in fact, his ideas of religion were those of the Indians on the Great Prairies, "the great spirit."—I need say no more on the subject, but proceed.

Trainer was lounging on one of the beds I have described, and I was moving about examining everything, when we heard Selwin not far off with his "Halloo, there, and be d—n'd to you:" this was of course hunting after his worthy family; both Trainer and I felt an insatiable curiosity to see all their manœuvres both inside and outside the house, so we sallied forth. Selwin was at the margin of a thicket, in which the whole of his family hid, begging of them to come out, and into the house: at last seeing that a more imperative method was necessary, he broke off a two-headed wattle, and began to beat

the cover; his wife first appeared, then the widow of the late captain, then the three children; they seemed as terrified as young deer, so we went into the house again, to let our host bring them in without fear or interruption.

We were not long in expectation of their arrival, as they soon appeared at the doorway, and leaped in one after the other, followed by the worthy Selwin, who introduced us to his wife, by pointing his staff at her: she was jet black, but finely featured, with an excellent form, though rather tall; the widow of the same colour, rather fat, but well-looking; the two boys and girl were brown, in fact the colour of Tahitians. Selwin's wardrobe had evidently been rather shy of late, as neither wife, widow, nor children had any covering, save a piece of old canvass, with a bit of cocoa-nut mattings round their waists.

The boys were as fine children as I had ever seen; in fact perfect young Herculeses in appearance. The girl was a puny thing, but it was taken every care of, as the widow monopolised it altogether, and would not allow the mother to lay hand on it. The eldest of the boys was called "Jim," after his father, the youngest was "Charley," after the late captain of the brig. Selwin christened them himself, and his ceremony consisted in the mother and widow hold-

ing up the respective boys at the door, whilst he said, "Call that boy Jim, — call that ere young fellow Charley, after the old skipper; and if any of you calls them anything else, I'll break your necks."

This ended the ceremony; the orders were punctually obeyed, as these fine boys answered quickly to their names whenever called. Selwin's domestic affairs were now uppermost in his mind, and he rapidly gave directions to get us something to eat; my wild ducks were handed to the boys, who went out, and amidst the most uproarious mirth plucked off the feathers, and sent them to the winds. There was also some fine fresh mullet, which with roast bread-fruit, yam, &c., was more than we even wished for.

The highly amusing part of the whole proceeding was our arrangement at table. The fixture of an arm-chair of course was there, but we insisted on Selwin's filling it; he began to think he was hard up for more seats, but an old seaman 's never cast, so he clapt four posts in the ground close together, and hammered them down "solid;" then the only plank he had left, he fastened on them with wooden pegs, and formed a perfect, though rough, form. On the other side there was no one, as his sable family

always preferred eating, sleeping and lounging on the mats.

Trainer and I sat together on the newly formed seat, whilst the king, alias Selwin, retained his chair. The scene was highly comical, as the whole family were scattered about on the mats, chattering away in their own half Malay jargon: every good thing generally has a quick end to it; at least such was the case with the viands that were placed before us. Change of scene, and a pleasant, careless few hours so whetted our appetites, that everything was soon cleared off, and what we did not, the women swept away: we all took a pull at a calabash that contained some delicious fresh water.

Trainer discharged one of his jacket pockets, which had been stowed with cigars. This was an unexpected treat at which Selwin's eyes glistened: he turned one over and over again, staring at it before he broke off the twisted end. On the whole, with all his eccentricity, he was an amiable man, fond of his family, and, according to his own account, spent a good part of the day playing with his boys about the island.

He exhibited to us a kind of drum he made for their special amusement: it consisted of a circular piece of wood about two feet long, carefully hollowed

to the thickness of a shell, with a shark's stomach, (a good substitute for parchment) on the ends, tightly braced down; this instrument was something like an ugly orator, better in effect than in appearance: the noise it made when played upon by "Jim" was very great; indeed it was so very effective, that his father made him not unfrequently rattle away upon it round the house on mornings, when he wanted to "rouse out all hands" earlier than usual.

Having finished our cigars, and amused ourselves for a little with some of Selwin's curious stories and droll sayings, we sallied forth to have a further examination of this part of the island; the scenery was much more irregular and pleasing, than the monotonous flat that presented itself to us the day before at the southern end. Hills and valleys of great beauty frequently appeared.

As we went along, our guide showed us one of those curiosities of nature, (not unfrequent on the islands of the Indian Archipelago,) a "hot spring:" it was situated in a kind of basin formed by large rocks that reared themselves up beside it, and seemed, as it were, to wall it in. In extent its surface was not more than ten yards either way: it appeared to be deep, looked black and muddy, and had a disagreeably fetid and sulphureous taste; large

bubbles occasionally played upon the surface, breaking and throwing off a kind of brown smoke. The heat of this "boiling pot," as Selwin called it, was so great, that a man's hand immersed in it for two minutes would be rapidly withdrawn. The atmosphere for half a mile around this was so annoying, that the birds avoided its neighbourhood; indeed we did not again fall in with their pleasant company until we were fully a mile away from it.

To make up for the offensiveness of this natural caldron, our guide showed to us several springs of icy coldness, almost concealed from view, and shaded from the hot rays of the sun, by the extended arms of the surrounding trees, that were covered over with broad green leaves. It was evident to us our friend had not chosen the least pleasing part of the island for his residence, as the diversity of hill and vale, with beautiful glades, the rich-looking clumps of trees, and the tall cocoa-nut, with its drooping head high above all, to say nothing of the fluttering about of richly plumaged birds, presented a picture that was at least pleasing to us, who had for some time previously gazed only on sky and water.

After having fatigued ourselves pretty well, we had another lounge in Selwin's house: here we held a council, not of war, but of peace, and it was deter-

mined that we should go down to the boat, and go on board for the night, accompanied by our friend Selwin, who did not hesitate to leave his attached family in charge of the "castle," as Trainer jocularly called it.

Selwin gave strict orders to his household not to follow him down to the boat: I was sorry to see the effect of this on the poor boys, as they cried bitterly, but we soon pacified them with the assurance that some of us, certainly I, would be up to-morrow, and to have some fish and yam ready; this was enough. On nearing the beach, our guide made a detour to show us his canoe, one made by his own hands: we soon arrived near a low narrow part of the beach, near which there was a dense grove of mangrove bushes; on pulling aside a number of these, and after having our faces well flapped by the recoil of their leafy branches, we arrived at a drain about forty feet long, by six wide, which did not communicate by a distance of thirty feet with the pool or bay outside.

On the surface of the water that filled this dock of Selwin's floated gracefully his canoe, and without having a list to one side or the other, displayed care in construction; it was made out of the trunk of an immense tree that grew close at hand, was about

thirty feet long, by three wide; it had paddle seats; the outrigger, a fine spar, was lying along the bank, and was easily attached when wanted: here it lay, the pride of Selwin, and whenever it was required out fishing, &c., he had only to give it a smart jerk off towards the beach, when it was soon launched into deep water; the united force of the family replaced it in a few minutes. This canoe dock was easily excavated, as the ground around was all sand, and as soon as they got to a sufficient depth below the sea outside the beach, of course it filled and gave them no further trouble.

We passed along down to the place we left our boat, directly where we landed: the bushes came close down, and in their shade, branches were spread out to rest on; close to this the remnant of a fire, with fish bones, bits of biscuit, and an old tobacco pipe; here had been a regale, but evidently a sailor's one; none of the men were to be seen. The boat lay riding at her small anchor in the centre of the small bay, slewed round now and then by every puff of wind: her sail was snugly covered over her as an awning; of course under it lay her crew fast asleep, and not a hand on the look-out. Trainer was at first vexed to think they were so careless, as, in case of

natives being on these islands, they would be pounced upon, and easily captured.

"Boat ahoy!" thundered out my friend. "Ay, ay, Sir," answered nearly all the heads that were thrust out from under their comfortably arranged awning. Down went the sail, up came the anchor, and she touched the beach; "Isn't this a pretty humbug of a look-out you keep for yourselves, and the boat?"—"Whoy, Sir, Tom Willis said he'd keep a weather eye open whilst wee'd have a snoose, but he went off like the rest of us."—"But why did not you stop on shore?"—"We did, Sir, for awhile, but it was too hot, and the precious flies and musquitos nearly eat us up, so we thought it better to shove off for comfort until you returned: there's lots of fish under the bushes there, Sir, for you."

On examining this goodly pile of fish, we found them all spoiled, as they left them thoughtlessly exposed to the sun: but the scavengers of the Pacific Ocean Islands were already on them, the land crabs and rats, and no doubt they were all removed before morning. After going on board, it was highly amusing to hear the curious part of the ship's crew inquiring of those in the boat the beauties and peculiarities of the island, and their answer of "You

couldn't get through for the bushes without breaking your shins, it was b——y hot, and so full of flies and d——d mosquitos, they had to shove off the boat, and moor her in deep water."

CHAPTER VII.

NIGHT AT OUR ANCHORAGE. — WE ALL CONTRIBUTE CLOTHING, ETC. TO SELWIN. — INDICATIONS OF A BLOW. — PREPARE FOR IT. — FORCE OF THE HURRICANE. — FINE WEATHER AGAIN. — ACCOMPANY SELWIN BACK TO HIS HOUSE. — MY SOJOURN WITH SELWIN. — SAIL FROM THIS ISLAND. — NATIVES AND THEIR HUTS ON THE SOUTHERN PART OF NEW BRITAIN. — VOLCANIC MOUNTAINS. — SAIL SOUTHERLY. — PASS SIR GEORGE ROOKE'S ISLAND. — MAKE THE LAND OF NEW GUINEA AT KING WILLIAM'S CAPE. — APPEARANCE OF THE LAND FROM THE VESSEL. — ENTER A BAY. — AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE AT ANCHOR. — CAPTAIN STEWART VISITS THE HOUND. — A DIGRESSION. — YANKEE AND JOHN-BULL SAILORS. — AN ACCOUNT OF CAPTAIN STEWART. — SOME OF HIS DOINGS IN THE PACIFIC.

THE night was charmingly fine, the sky was of a deep blue, and twinkling all over with glittering stars: independent of our visitors, the owls, several night birds perched on our yards, and uttered the most unearthly screams and noises I had ever heard. I sat on deck until late, gazing on this night scene; I rolled myself up in my old Californian hunting coat, keeping one eye and an ear always out for anything, and strove to slumber on the deck; but all to no

purpose, as the deep bassoon sound of the sleeping crew of the Hound scattered about the deck continually startled me, broke all my poetic fancies, if I have any, and made me strut about here and there, and give them a kick whenever I thought the nightmare affected them. However, I tired myself out at last, with diamond skies, unearthly screams of night birds, and the equally sonorous noise of sleeping British tars, so I made a dive into the cabin, and slept soundly until four bells, when I again refreshed my vision with our curious friend Selwin, who lay on a bed near my door stretched at full length, beard as prominent as ever.

Shortly after breakfast, the captain hinted at arranging presents for Selwin and his family: old pieces of canvass were spread on the table and deck, shirts, trousers, jackets, &c., were properly laid thereon by all of us, calico, blue and white, for the boys and ladies, needles and thread in abundance; then when all were tied up, two axes, an adze, two saws, and a hoe, (diamonds in the eyes of our solitary friend); the captain gave him a carbine, and I gave him an old single barrel I used for shooting rabbits in California, with lots of powder and shot.

The extent of our trifling gifts, which to us were of little value, seemed to have the effect on poor Selwin

as if he had obtained a mine of gold, and the possession of them literally confounded him. The captain ordered a boat and crew to convey us round to Selwin's harbour, and we were about starting when the sky became suddenly overcast, and the dark clouds that moved over us betokened a coming storm. The appearance of everything around us was so completely changed, that I ran down into the cabin and looked at the barometer, which is seldom influenced by the change of weather within the tropics. However, ours had fallen considerably within the last three hours.

Trainer consulted with Selwin as to what we might expect. He said, at once, we would have a "hard blow of it for a few hours, and to make all snug." The captain's energy soon made the crew move, and top-gallant-masts and topmasts were soon down, with all the yards, another bower anchor was let go, and tarpaulings completely covered everything that was on deck. A few minutes after the gale was on us, or rather over us, in full fury. It was one continued deafening roar; the force of it on everything around us was very great. It came from the southward, and the passage between the two islands was one sheet of foam; tops of bushes and branches of trees were hurled across at us from the

other island, large birds were swept off, and seemed to make a vain attempt to descend amongst the mangrove bushes near us. We enjoyed a snug berth, and, although the cables were heavily strained, the Hound held on, never dragged an inch, and in fact was as safe as if we lay in the London Docks.

After about five hours, the hurricane abated as quickly as it came on, and we had fine weather again. The boat was again ready, and Selwin, with his presents, and I got in. Trainer declined coming this day, as there was much work to be done on board that required his inspection, so we pulled round and landed at the same place we did the day before; and after having landed us, I sent the boat round again to the vessel, as the captain wanted the additional hands. Selwin and I left the things he brought with him on the beach and started off to the houses, where we soon found the only damage they sustained from the gale was the partial removal of some thatch. The boys were delighted to see us again, and the whole family formed a merry procession back to the beach to bring up the bundles of presents.

As soon as we all arrived back at the house, the parcels were severally examined, and the delight of the women on seeing the blue and white calico knew

no bounds. They danced and capered about the house with it in their arms, as if they were out of their wits. The boys also were in extacies with two of those painted card men, which I brought off with me for them. They seated themselves on the mats, holding up the men opposite each other, and pulling the cords quickly to see whose would dance the quickest. As for the monarch of the island, he seemed to gaze with unfeigned satisfaction on the working tools he got. The whole scene was a moving one, and one of great simplicity.

I remained with Selwin the remaining few days of our stay here, and had an opportunity with his canoe of examining some of the adjoining islands; they were more broken and rugged, volcanic agency had evidently been at work at no remote period, yet parts of them were very fertile; the wild nutmeg was growing on most of them in great abundance. Trainer came round only once more to visit Selwin's family, and bid them farewell. On that evening all these poor people accompanied us to the water's edge, with every feeling of thankfulness, and as the boat darted forward through the opening between the rocks that formed the entrance to Selwin's bay, we gazed for the last time on that strange man, and observed him waving his cap in farewell.

All the necessary work being now completed on board, and the men not caring about a run on shore here, the Hound was got underweigh, and warped out through the southern passage into the open sea, where we found breeze enough to give steerage way, and clear the currents. We now steered southerly along the shore of New Britain, and had two trading visits with the natives; there was a great deal of ambergris and cocoa-nut oil procured. The natives nearly the same as at the northern end of the island, or those of New Ireland.

The houses were mere sheds, open all round and thatched with the cocoa-nut leaf; a kind of stake fence encircled the dwelling, and as the whole was surrounded, or partly shaded by trees, the effect was pretty. As to the costume of these poor people, it much resembled that of Selwin's family, and that was, when we fell in with him, scanty enough, in fact it is better not to mention it. They appeared simple enough; yet once, on some misunderstanding of trade occurring, they made a savage, I may say a ferocious, demonstration with spears, clubs, and hideously painted bodies. The yam and bread fruit seemed to be abundant with them, as we got a great deal of each for mere trifles.

The southern portion of the island is very volcanic,

and the hilly ridges that existed for some way into the interior, were nothing more than enormous piles of broken and burnt rocks, rent and pitched up by great combustive power, in confused heaps. In some of the deep ravines, there were great beds of black lava, where the streams of this fiery torrent had ran from some crater in the interior; but wherever the earth was free from stones and lava, its vegetating power was immense, and was densely covered by the most luxuriant vegetation. The mountains in the interior appear to be of great elevation, and the rivers or streams passing down into the sea were of some importance, and navigable for boats a long way up.

On leaving New Britain, and in crossing the easternmost Dampier's Straits, we sighted an island of considerable size, termed on our charts "Sir George Rook's Island," — but as the weather became at the time thick and squally, it was deemed unsafe to go close in, so kept away southerly, and soon came in sight of the large island of Papua or New Guinea. Being then favoured by a fresh breeze and clear weather, we ran the vessel close in with the land at King William's Cape. This part of the shore is rocky and precipitous: the swell making in towards the land was very great, and when it broke

against the rocks, the spray was driven high into the air, in fact against this rocky shore; as we sailed along, there was one long line of foam, magnificent enough to look at, but rather dangerous to approach.

The land in the interior appeared very high, but densely covered every where with luxuriant looking trees and bushes down to the rocks. We steered on along-shore in nearly a north-westerly course on the look out for an inlet or bay to run into; but when none appeared, the vessel was hauled off, and laid too during each night, and as soon as daylight again favoured us, we would make sail in-shore. The wind was not steady and retarded us greatly, as for one day's fresh breeze, there would follow two and three of nearly calm weather; however, on the sixth day after sighting the land, the line of breakers I have spoken of were broken for the space of two miles, and as we ran in towards this, the water became brown and muddy and gave every indication of our nearing the mouth of a river of some importance.

As the breeze freshened up we stood right in under all sail, and were soon in a small bay that formed the mouth of the river, and as we rounded the westernmost head of it, were agreeably surprised to see a brig lying at anchor, about half a mile off, and

some houses that had the aspect of a small town. As we were now fairly in the bay, the high land on our starboard hand going in shaded us from the wind and left us in a calm.

The brig at anchor now hoisted the stars and stripes that told us she was an American, and in answer, up went our ensign — his father's,— old John Bull's own, a flag that any true British subject will give his last kick to keep fluttering in the breeze. Smell the powder once under it, and where is the man to say lower? No, no, hammer away as long as there is a man or stick standing, and if she is to go down, let the old bunting wave freely amongst the smoke over the bodies of the men who defended it.

Immediately two boats were manned by the brig and sent to us, which, with two of our own, soon towed our brigantine into a snug berth close to her; where she was moored in ten fathoms water, and directly afterwards Captain Stewart came alongside in his gig, and ascended on deck, where he made a low bow with peculiar comicality of appearance.

I must here digress to inform the landsman, that there is such a thing as politeness on board ship, that it is customary for every respectable *Salt* on his *arrival on deck* to raise his hat, cap, or southwester, to the incongruous, but I may add very independent

party, in welcome readiness to receive him. That, as soon as this part of the transaction is over, he walks aft with the skipper, and his boat's crew tumble over the side, first a head, then the arms, body, and legs, and soon ensues a gossip about their respective captains, &c.

Not the least amusing part of this stage of the interview, is the captain having with him a crew of "*green-horns*," whom he has an objection to talk over matters with "*old hands;*" in such cases the boat is ordered back to return at a certain time, and as they dip their oars in the water, a few of the old hands would give them a wink, put their thumbs up to their noses with outspread hands, and thus silently express themselves.

This is particularly the case with American ships, and especially the whalers, as there is scarcely ten men on board when they sail, who knows the stem from the stern of the ship. The green hands, or rather the "bush hands," for they are almost to a man farmer's sons, are seduced on board with a promise of *making their fortunes* in the South Seas, and it is needless for me to say a "genuine yankee" will go far for that; so that the skippers of these vessels have been known to square their yards, and run away from an English vessel, where their crew

of regular old "Wapping and Rotherhithe tars" would tell them how much *tea, beef, pork,* and *duff* they ought to have.

The fact is, in English ships in the Pacific and elsewhere, every man is a *sailor,* and every thing on board is "ship shape," but with Americans, and particularly their whalers after a passage round the "Horn," you could stand on deck, lay hold of standing rigging or stays, and shake them about as if they were mere slack ropes for the amusement of juveniles on board. How the sticks hold up in a fresh breeze I cannot say, but I presume the following, which I heard one day on board one of them may explain. Our skipper taking a seaman's squint aloft, laying hold of the stays and rattling them about, — "I say, Swain, how did you get this ship round in this state, without losing your masts?" Captain Swain, —"I guess we were lucky in winds!" I must add, most of the American whale ships are splendid vessels, and if they had a few thorough seamen on board to keep all "ship shape," they would look very fine.

Captain Stewart was an old acquaintance, well known to both Trainer and I, who met him more than once at the Sandwich Islands and at New Zealand. He was a Scotchman by birth, in fact, a

regular highlander, born at the head of Loch Lomond, not many miles from Rob Roy's cave, and he prided himself no little on the locality of his birth, was a tall raw-boned looking man, upright as a rush, and of bold, manly, daring aspect. He was one capable of forming any wild project and carrying out his plans at any risk. His crew were always fond of him, as he was like a father to them, and to my knowledge he was frequently the warm friend of the friendless; but he had his faults, like all others — his were peculiar.

In speculation and trading at the various islands he generally dealt fairly, but sometimes his dealings were of the most extraordinary character; for instance, once, at Cook's Straits (New Zealand), several of the tribes had a pitched battle; some of them were from the north part of the northernmost island. A feast on the dead, of course, always ensues after such; and, rather than march overland, they freighted Stewart's vessel to carry the chiefs and the dead, packed up in baskets, round to the place of entertainment. He took on board upwards of two hundred dead bodies, cut up and well packed, with eighteen or twenty chiefs, sailed round, delivered his cargo, and received in payment a large quantity of

dressed flax, which he afterwards brought to Sidney and sold at a satisfactory price.

This speculation was talked of everywhere, and the particulars were well known in Sidney, the Sandwich, and Georgian Islands. I believe he was the first civilized man that ever, either before or since, took such a freight; and I believe the circumstance has been mentioned in other publications than mine. He was frequently censured for it by his friends in the South Seas, holding their noses as they passed him; but he always said, "it was no one's business but his own, though it was a d——d stinking cargo!"

Another trifling affair blemished his character, and that was, that he made several runs to New Ireland, New Britain, and New Guinea, traded for slaves, took them on board in the usual manner, and sold them either to the Chinese or Dutch settlements more to the westward. To this charge he replied, that, "It was nothing more than many others did, and that whilst engaged in such traffic he never had the British ensign at his peak."

He had a full Highland costume (Stewart plaid) with him always, which he took a great pride in wearing on particular occasions, and he certainly looked very well in it. I remember him once, at

Wahoo (Sandwich Islands), at a fancy ball, if you please, dance a regular solo Highland fling, to the great admiration of the beholders, whilst the orchestra, composed of amateurs, merchants, ship captains, supercargoes, &c., played suitable music. By-the-by, at the same time, one of the musicians was only an apparent one, as he held up his violin which, on close inspection, had no string, and made such movements of his body and his bow as would lead one to suppose he was leader of the band. He played his part admirably, and deceived all for some time. He was a full, corpulent, jolly-looking John Bull person, and one of the best informed and most gentlemanly whaling captains out of London. His name is Captain Francis Stavers, had been several whaling voyages, and the last time I had the pleasure of meeting him was off the Gallopagos Islands, when he commanded the ship Favourite.

To return to Stewart: I have known his purse open, and his ship ready to receive any distressed friend that wished to accept of them; and with the exception of the delinquencies I have mentioned, he was a thorough sailor, and every inch of him the man. To account for his being now under American colours I must remark, that he purchased his present vessel from a Yankee at "Mazatlan," a town on the

western coast of Mexico, and having himself registered, years back, as a worthy citizen of the State of New York, with his protection in his pocket-book, he thought he might as well let the papers and colours (the stars and stripes) stand as they were until he sold her again, which would be most likely after his present cruise.

This is not an unusual thing in the Pacific. My friend, Captain Trainer, always owned the vessel he commanded, and sold it, cargo and all, whenever he pleased; but he invariably hoisted the English ensign, and had the vessel's papers, after purchase, regulated by the British consul. In fact, he said, "He could not feel at home if he had any other colours than his own flying over his head."

CHAPTER VIII.

CAPTAIN STEWART'S OFFER TO CAPTAIN TRAINER. — WE GO ON BOARD THE BRIG. — STEWART CAPTURES A PAPUAN CHIEF. — A DESCRIPTION OF THIS SAVAGE. — STEWART'S PLAN TO MAKE FRIENDS WITH THE PAPUANS. — ITS SUCCESS. — COMMENCE TRADING. — BARBARIAN SCENE. — NATIVE HOUSES. — NATURAL PRODUCTIONS OF THIS DISTRICT. — MORE NOISY PETS ON BOARD. — I LAND AT THE TOWN. — AWKWARDLY SITUATED. — MY ESCAPE. — BOWS AND ARROWS OF THE PAPUAN'S. — SAIL FROM THIS BAY. — BOTH VESSELS KEEP IN COMPANY. — RUN ALONG SHORE. — HOSTILE DEMONSTRATION OF THE NATIVES. — ANCHOR IN A BAY. — THE VESSELS ATTACKED BY PAPUANS. — WE ARE OBLIGED TO FIRE ON THEM AND THEIR TOWN. — SAIL ACROSS THE MOUTH OF GREAT BAY. — ISLANDS OF MYSORY AND JOBIE. — CHINESE AND PAPUANS.

THESE two captains were, like many others in the Pacific, their own owners, their own supercargoes, with unlimited powers to go where they pleased, and speculate in anything or anywhere that suited their own ideas of gain, and, as Captain Stewart remarked to my friend of the Hound, "I say, Trainer, it's a d——d comfortable thing to think on, that we can

shape our course and do as we like, without writing home to some know-nothing owners for orders!"

Stewart examined our vessel fore and aft with the eye of a practised seaman, her length, breadth of beam, forecastle, and quarter deck, the guns and their fittings; then throwing his large grey eyes aloft at the rigging, rake of masts, &c., he swore a tremendous oath she was the prettiest craft he had ever seen. He wanted, at once to exchange his vessel with us and buy at any price, he had his bank on board, plenty of doubloons and dollars in specie for the purpose; but Trainer begged him to "hold on a bit," as he had enough himself, and that "he would not part with the Hound until she sank under him." This ended Stewart's impetuous offers. It was then agreed upon that, as we were engaged in the same trading, here we should keep together.

At Captain Stewart's pressing invitation, Trainer and I dined on board his vessel: his cabins were sumptuously fitted up, and a large organ, which he purchased from a London whaler, played a number of pieces of music; the Hound had altered her position, and was lying nearly alongside, so we were very comfortable; at 8 p. m. one of the mates entered the cabin, and reported that a canoe was moving about the vessels, with only one native on

board. "Now Trainer my boy, now's the time to do business; I'll take that fellow, as I have been lying here three days and haven't seen man, woman, or child." Stewart called his first mate down, and soon arranged a line after the manner of the lasso, and went on deck; Trainer gave me a wink, so I extinguished my cigar and followed.

The quarter-boat was stealthily lowered with its crew and Captain Stewart, the tackles were unhooked, but it lay still alongside; a gentle splash sounded in our ears on the other side of the vessel, this did not escape our friend, who gently shoved his boat astern and was beginning to move on the canoe, when, by Trainer's orders, we opened two large lanterns and threw a clear light on the solitary Papuan, who was instantly pounced upon by Stewart, and made fast hand and foot, and his canoe brought alongside; he was soon on deck, but conveyed, tied as he was, down into the cabin; more lights were introduced, which completely exposed this captured native to our view.

He was a man about forty, his hair curled, or naturally frizzled, fully a foot out from his head, he was above the middle size, stoutly made, his teeth were died red; the centre cartilage of the nose was pierced, and from it was suspended a tortoiseshell

ornament as broad as the palm of our hand; there were several curious engravings on it; but the most extraordinary part of the business was, that at any time he spoke, or he was going to eat any thing we gave him, he lifted this ornament, like a lid over a recess, and did not let it fall down again until he had eaten enough, or had done talking. His body was covered over with some blue die or tattoo, the pattern was beautiful on some parts of him; the only covering this savage had was a strip of cocoa-nut mat died red round his waist, and made fast with a cord of the same material between his legs; his ears also were pierced large, and had bunches of snow-white down through them, which had a fine effect.

Stewart had a kind of interpreter on board his vessel who was introduced, but only a few words could be comprehended on either side; the fact is, it is hardly worth while getting an interpreter at New Guinea, as the various tribes speak different languages, and one can scarcely understand the other. There was a guard placed at the cabin entrance to prevent the escape of this fellow, and Stewart cut the ropes that bound him; he rubbed his sides and legs to feel if he was actually free. "Doctor!" said Trainer, "there's a fine specimen for your collection!"

Captain Stewart brought out a scarlet mantle and put it on the Papuan, who seemed at first confounded, but afterwards delighted; at first he thought he was to be killed and eaten, but when that fear passed off, he seemed beside himself with joy at all the presents he received. A bed was laid for him on the cabin deck, but he sat up all the time examining his presents. As I could not sleep myself I remained up, and gave him some children's toys, which seemed to make everlasting friendship between us. It was strange to observe the ferocious aspect of this savage, and the simplicity with which he handled the baubles we gave him. The next morning, after explaining to him by signs the articles we wanted to trade for, he got into his canoe and paddled off for the shore, with all his presents, shouting away triumphantly as he neared the houses.

We soon afterwards found out that this man was a chief of high distinction, that his tribe was very numerous, and his district extensive, and that he merely came off for reconnoitring purposes, whilst he kept his people close from our view. Our introduction to him was certainly a rough one, yet Stewart's plan of grabbing him proved to be the best, as his being quickly let free, hospitably treated on board, and presented with many gifts, made him

conclude it was all a capital joke; and as he paddled away from the vessel's side, his body shook so much with savage mirth, that his large nose-ornament dangled about the lower part of his face, occasionally displaying his red stained teeth.

In about two hours afterwards, the river and its banks presented a stirring change, canoes were darting across the stream here and there, communicating with each other; and the platforms or wharfs that extended into the water, on which the houses were erected, seemed crowded with people. They shortly came off to us with their various articles of trade, and for the rest of the day the number of canoes and natives that were crowded in them, afforded a true picture of savage animation and wildness; numbers of them were clinging to the vessel's side, and seemed intent on coming on deck, but we begged to be excused, and strict orders were given to the men not to allow any natives on deck, except those who presented their articles of trade at the starboard gangway.

This appeared to annoy some of them much, as it stopped them exercising their pilfering propensities. Any of them that were permitted on board were as nimble as monkeys, and picked up everything they could lay their hands on. I observed that the nasal

ornaments amongst the tribe were much varied in size and carving, and that all their teeth were not dyed red, but some appeared beautifully white; perhaps, it may be an insignia of dignity, or chieftainship. Whether the cause I assign for it, fashion, or fancy, dictates the staining of the teeth, it gives to the ferocious looking Papuan a truly demon-like finish.

In the erections of the houses at this bay, there was a long platform or kind of pier run out into the water a considerable way, and on it the houses are put up in a double range, resembling the small cabins on either of the decks of a steam vessel; their sides are made of boards and split bamboo, covered on the inside with stout matting; they are generally thatched with cocoa-nut leaves. As well as I could learn from them (through Stewart's half-interpreter), their reason for building their houses out on these piers, and living, as it were, on the water, was, that the thick groves of trees, and the dense jungles surrounding them on land, were full of annoying insects, and that they would be greatly tormented by them. Another reason, which seemed more plausible, was, that there are scarcely two tribes in New Guinea on friendly terms, each invading the other's district for the capture of slaves, to be sold in trading to the

Chinese and Dutch in those seas, and if the houses, clustered together on the piers, were attacked by water, the inhabitants could run into the bush; and if a force came on them from the land side, they could jump into their canoes, which are always docked under the platform, and escape by water.

The natives here are expert fishermen, and we enjoyed, daily, an abundant supply of excellent fish, and bread-fruit and plantain, fresh plucked from their stems, were on board every morning. There was also no lack of the wild yam, with lemons and limes, so we refreshed ourselves very satisfactorily, at (I may say truly) a cheap rate. There were also some hogs of a small size, with formidable tusks and scarcely any bristles on them, which ran like grey-hounds, and were difficult to be taken; the meat of the few we used on board was excellent.

During our stay here of fourteen days, both vessels obtained a good supply of the following articles from the natives: — Ambergris, tortoiseshell, some valuable seed, and large pearl, birds of Paradise, skins, prepared as the Papuans only know how, and packed in a large joint of bamboo, the air being carefully excluded by a wooden bung or stopper at the open end.

As for parrots, black and red lories, there was no

end to them. Sailors are fond of pets at sea, and every man, in both vessels, had one or two of these noisy birds. On going on deck in the morning, one might imagine that the vessels were captured by them, for, in place of feeling uneasy at their change of quarters, they seemed to feel confidence in their numbers, screamed, scolded, laughed, and chattered away at each other at such a rate, that we were obliged to put them between decks to get the necessary work accomplished on board.

During the last two days of our stay, a number of women and children came off and hovered about the vessel in their canoes; some of them seemed well formed and handsome; they had the same mat-covering round their waist as the men had, but a great many of them had pieces of blue Surat cloth, as a mantle of their shoulders. They all had strings of china beads, variously coloured, round their necks. The Papuans here seemed to be well provided, by the Chinese and Dutch, with axes, chopping-knives, and other iron tools.

My landing here was confined to two small islands at one side of the bay, that were unfrequented by natives except on their fishing excursions, and once I landed at the houses. I was no sooner up on the platform than I was surrounded by a crowd of

natives; they allowed me to pass on a short way, when men, women, and children closed in on me: I believe they were very desirous of having some relic of my landing amongst them, as, with pieces of split bamboo which cuts keenly, one took a piece out of the back of my jacket, another cut the collar off, a third pulled the sleeve of my jacket far down over my hand to see if it came on or off, and then cut off the cuff. I felt something doing about my legs, and turned my head round to see what it was, when I perceived large slices taken out of the legs of my trousers; I felt very awkwardly situated, for the least irritable act on my part might seal my fate. So, in the most good-humoured and pleasant manner possible, I made my way through them back to the canoe I came in; and as I was in the act of getting in to shove off, a tall barbarous-looking fellow snatched the hat off my head; however, I was very glad to escape, as I began to think that as they cut away so dexterously at my garments, my skin and flesh would suffer next.

These natives in this bay made no show of any warlike weapons in their transactions with our vessels; but during my short and annoying visit to them on shore, I observed a plentiful supply of spears, and bows and arrows of great length, arranged

ready for handling, on long pegs driven into the front wall, immediately under the edge of the thatched roof. The bows were fully eight feet in length, made of bamboo, slit and lashed together. What they used for a string for it was a strip of long rattan. The arrows were at least six feet, of small cane, and pointed with either bone or shell. Some of them were barbed, and were terrible-looking weapons to pierce a man with.

However, here we had the good-luck to avoid all misunderstandings with the natives. Having satisfactorily ended our trading, and finding that the articles of trade we required from them were for the present exhausted, we got underweigh, and steered along the northern shore in a westerly direction. Stewart's vessel was a bad sailer, and we had often near night, or when a fog approached, to shorten sail or lay to until he came up with us. Along the north shore to the mouth of the Great Bay, the weather was squally and unfavourable for running too close in, but we took advantage of the finer part of it, ran in and anchored at the mouths of rivers three several times. The second place we anchored at, the natives appeared at all the landing places about in great numbers. As we dropt our anchors close in we had a full view of them.

By every fierce gesture, and by the handling of their bows and arrows, they seemed determined on resisting our landing. There were several presents held up to their view, but all to no use. At last, after lying at anchor for a few hours, we were saluted by a shower of their six feet arrows, which fell on deck and around us without doing any harm. Captain Stewart was on board our vessel at the time, and he and Trainer consulted together. They clearly saw we lay within arrow range, and all were amazed at the distance they carried. The vessels must be moved further out, or the beach and various landings cleared of these wild people by a few shot from the guns. The latter alternative was a disagreeable one. It was now calm, and the only way to shift the vessels was by towing them out further, an operation that would expose the men too much.

It was determined (after a humane delay, and another flight of arrows that went right over us,) to let them see we were not to be thus repelled. Trainer and Stewart pointed a gun each at them, and, though the humming sound of the round shot, as it rushed through the air to its destination, was alarming enough to those who knew its effect, yet it passed through these crowds of people (with certainly doing some mischief, and scattering sand and broken

sticks about them,) with no other effect than creating temporary confusion, and a few more arrows were discharged, in defiance, at us. The guns were again loaded (but with grape), and discharged with precision.

The effect of these rounds was more decided, as the fatal effect of the pattering shower on the crowded beach and the natives, who were standing up to their knees in the water in front of it, created such a panic amongst them, that they rushed up under cover of the trees and houses. It was deemed prudent to let them know such shelter could not protect them from us. So Trainer put a shell into one of the guns, and discharged it with such precision that it exploded amongst the houses, and two of them were shortly on fire. The Papuans were so effectually scared, as to run away into the woods and leave them burning.

"I expect," said Trainer, "we are clear of these fellows for this night. If we had let them go on discharging their arrows at us, they would have attempted boarding the vessels." Indeed, to justify my friend's acts, canoes of large size, capable of containing many men, were fast assembling near the chief landing place; and some of the natives were seen wading into the water, impatient to get into

them, until the timely rounds of grape-shot drove them back. It was the most humane way to act; for, if they attempted to board us numbers of them would have been killed, as their natural daring would oblige us to act a determined part and defend the vessels with energy.

At daylight next morning all was silent around, and not a native appeared. The land breeze came down the valley before us, the anchors were taken up, and we were soon clear of this hostile locality. In passing across the mouth of Great Bay we steered between the Islands of Mysory and Jobie. The moon was changing at the time, and we experienced some bad thick weather, and squalls so heavy, that we had to close-reef our sails several times. We made four different runs into anchorage at places off the west side of Great Bay, but invariably found Chinese junks there before us, who made a habit of instilling into the Papuan mind that all foreigners but themselves were liars, thieves, and robbers, and that we would never pay for any merchandise brought off; and it was of no use to endeavour to explain, as they had effectually prejudiced them against strangers.

They had two cunning motives for this; one, was the monopoly, to themselves, of a really valuable

trade; the other, their fear of our introducing fire-arms as articles of trade amongst the sturdy Papuans, and, that they might catch a drubbing some time themselves. They were all busy here, taking on board gangs of slaves, preserved edible birds' nests, &c., and giving in exchange china ware, beads, blue cloth, and iron tools. The Papuans at the western-most end of New Guinea, were less savage and more intent on trading than those of the easternmost part of the island, and were well supplied with working tools, which were the means of greatly altering for the better the appearance of their dwellings and canoes; but the real pest of the north part of this great island is the lying Chinese, who have systematically been the means of shutting up its trade from others.

CHAPTER IX.

ANCHOR IN GEELVINK'S BAY. — STEWART MEETS AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE. — A CHINESE JUNK AT ANCHOR. — STEWART SCOLDS THE CAPTAIN OF THE JUNK. — RICH SCENE. — WE GET TRADING MATERIALS FROM THE CHINAMAN. — ROUND THE WESTERN EXTREME OF PAPUA. — ENTER M'CLURE'S INLET. — EFFECT OF THE CURRENTS ON THE VESSELS IN OUR PASSAGE ROUND. — RUN DEEP INTO THE INLET. — A DUTCH BRIG AT ANCHOR. — BOTH VESSELS ARE MOORED CLOSE TO HER. — DUTCH CAPTAIN AND SUPERCARGO VISIT US. — THE PAPUANS ON FRIENDLY TERMS WITH THEM. — A MATRIMONIAL ALLIANCE SOMETIMES USEFUL. — SPEND THE EVENING ON BOARD THE DUTCH BRIG. — CONVIVIALITY AND ITS RESULTS. — ALL HANDS-A-HOY. — THE NON-APPEARANCE OF THE CREW. — REASON WHY. — MILLER AND I LAND AT THE PAPUAN TOWN. — AN ACCOUNT OF IT AND ITS INHABITANTS. — MILLER'S HOUSE. — HIS PAPUAN RELATIVES.

THE Chinese often by over trickery and cunning get into scrapes with the natives, but the few matchlocks erected round their decks on stands, somewhat like a meeting of long telescopes on their legs, effectually settle their differences, which we understood generally

ended by an exaction of articles of trade from the Papuans. Before rounding the north-westernmost peninsula of this great island we ran into a harbour called Dorey, near the western side of Geelvink's Bay, a place greatly resorted to by the Chinese traders. There was only one solitary junk lying there at the time, and, as we ran in, Captain Stewart chose his berth close alongside the Chinaman.

As usual wherever the Chinese are, we received neither trading nor complimentary visits from the Papuans. The remainder of the day was occupied by the crews of both vessels in setting up the rigging which had been strained during the late squally weather we encountered. Trainer and I dined with Stewart, and after dark one of the mates came down into the cabin and reported, that a Chinaman had come on board from the junk, could speak English, said "he knew you before, sir, and wants to go with us." "Tell him to come down until we have a look at him," said our host.

The Chinaman shortly appeared, and Stewart at once recognised him as an old Sandwich Island acquaintance, who had been on board several English vessels, and lastly acted in the capacity of cook in an hotel at Wahoo. He was generally known by the name of Sing. Now, it so happened that Stewart's

cook was for the present disabled, having received a severe contusion by the blow of a block in shortening sail during one of the late squalls; and, as Sing earnestly entreated to be allowed to remain, our friend at once shipped him as cook. He seemed as happy as man could be at the change of affairs, and grateful to Captain Stewart for taking him.

Sing detailed to us at great length the trading operations of the Chinese amongst the Papuans, their long lying stories to them about all other strangers; and, wound up by informing us that the skipper of the junk he had just left, as soon as he saw us in the offing, went on shore, told more lies, and warned his native agents to have nothing to do with us. This made Trainer laugh outright, particularly when he saw Stewart in such a passion at this account of the Chinaman's doings. We soon after separated for the night, with a particular request to come on board next morning to breakfast and try some of Sing's curry, which he knew before he was a good hand at preparing. The next morning we enjoyed at Stewart's hospitable table an excellent pair of curried fowls, prepared in first rate style by the worthy Sing. In fact, it is Chinamen only that understand the true method of preparing and cooking this dish.

After breakfast Stewart called Sing to him, and

told him to interpret every word he said to the captain of the junk, and fail in nothing. The Chinaman was sitting on a cushion on deck smoking, his long queue or tail away behind him. On being hailed rather roughly, for, it was "Skipper-a-hoy, and be d——d to you," he stood up and answered. "What's the reason," said Stewart, "when you saw us running in yesterday morning, you went on shore telling all sorts of damnable lies of us to the natives?" He told another lie in answering, for he said he was not on shore. "Come, Sing, my hearty, tell me, did he ill use you whilst on board the junk?" said Stewart. Sing answered in the affirmative, and said he was often beaten with thick rattans. "Well, now," said Stewart. "tell him you know he was on shore yesterday morning, and that he's a liar, and you have my permission to give it to him."

This was gratifying to Sing to have some opportunity of paying off old scores, particularly when he knew he was safe from the rattan of his late captain. Sing interpreted the captain's words, then he commenced on his own account, and scolded away in Chinese, occasionally making the most comical and contemptible gestures, not forgetting the repeated application of his thumb to his nose; the skipper of the junk danced and stamped with rage, and when

he would stop, Sing was sure to stir him up again with some other words; at last he became so frenzied with rage, that he slewed round one of his matchlocks and pointed it at poor Sing, who hid under cover of the bulwarks.

Stewart on seeing this quickly opened one of the ports, and showed the enraged skipper of the junk the muzzle of one of his guns, pointing significantly at it; this had an instantaneous effect upon the Chinaman, who again altered the aim of his matchlock. Stewart now desired Sing, whose fear had vanished, to tell his late captain, "that he was a base liar, and a cowardly thief, and if he saw any more of his tricks, if he belonged to the sun as well as to the moon, he'd blow him and his 'Eternal Safety' (the name of the junk) to the d——l."

We were in want of some China trading articles, such as, chopping knives, axes, china beads, &c., and Stewart, being informed by Sing that there was plenty on board the junk, took the liberty now of making a direct demand for some, which through fear was at once acceded to. The supply of articles being on board, we sent to know the price, as we wanted to pay cash for them, Sing being told to say "we were fair traders, and no lying schemers," he was sent more than he asked for them, and the

various articles were divided between Stewart and Trainer; which we afterwards found were of great value to us, being highly prized by the inhabitants of New Guinea. The Chinese scolding match was a rich scene; but the part of it which Sing and his irritated opponent had all to themselves, convulsed the crews of both vessels with laughter. In the afternoon a fine fresh breeze swept us out of the harbour of Dorey, and relieved the fears of the Chinaman.

After leaving the last-mentioned port, it was determined on to try and trade on the southern coast of this large island; and to accomplish this purpose, we sailed round its north-westernmost extremity, through Damprier's Strait (bear in mind there are two straits here, which bear the name of that adventurous navigator, one separating the island of New Britain from Papua, opposite King William's Cape, the other one at the north-western extreme of Papua, and separating it from the island of Wageeoo), keeping close to the shore of Papua; and when we sighted the island of Sallawatty, deemed it prudent to go round its western coast, and after rounding this island, steered south-east, leaving the large island of Mysol to the westward of us, and so entered M'Clure's Inlet,

which is so deep that it nearly cuts a good slice off the north-westernmost end of Papua.

Now, it took a little more time to make our passage round from Geelvink's Bay, into M'Clure's Inlet, than I do in telling it. I don't intend to bore you with the hourly account of our log-book, nor describe the comical action of our weathercock (we had a fanciful one on board to check the truth of our dog vanes), but I must say, that, if "variety is charming," we were actually charmed.

We experienced currents running in all directions, some fast and some slow; winds puffing strongly from all quarters, at other times dead calms; lightning, both straight and crooked; all sorts of thunder from the loud brattle over our heads, to the distant low rumble; rain sometimes scarce, and the weather burning hot, at others, pouring on us in torrents, as if all hands were aloft heaving it down in buckets' full to cool the decks. There was such a number of pets on board, parrots, monkeys, &c., that a row now and then occurred amongst the men, when their favourites would assault others by bite or scratch.

But what seemed to create general admiration, was, when both vessels (Stewart was in close company with us) got becalmed, and were acted upon by cross rippling currents, it really looked as if they

were endeavouring to get up some coquetting dance: first whirled round rapidly several times, then side by side, turn off again, twice round, then face each other, that is, the jib-boom of one nearly touching the other, the swell causing them to bow like a pair of Tombolas, then round again, coquet for a little, and stem to stern; at last they became so loving that they embraced each other, and that, affectionately too, as it required the united exertion of both crews to separate them. They had really tied themselves together, for some small spars were sprung or broken, and a good deal of rigging had to be cut before the separation could be effected.

This ludicrous motion of the vessels, and the three several collisions that had taken place, caused their respective crews to have queer and fanciful imaginings, but all agreed that either the sea about here, or the vessels were enchanted, for it was a matter of some difficulty to keep them apart.

We sailed deep into M'Clure's Inlet, some parts of the shore seemed bold and rocky, whilst here and there a strip of beach could be seen; when about two-thirds in on the southern shore of the Inlet, we saw a large brig lying at anchor in front of the mouth of a river. The calm bright beach on either side of its entrance, with the deep beds of foliage in

the back ground had a pretty effect. The Hound was to her anchorage first, and took a berth near the stranger, Stewart's vessel came too, after some time, and moored close to us; all three vessels now had their ensigns flying, we, of course, the English, Stewart the Yankee, and the stranger the Dutch.

A boat was soon on board of us from the Dutch brig (Swerrer), with the captain and supercargo, to pay their respects and bid us welcome. The Dutch captain had only a few words of broken English; but the supercargo, and part owner of the vessel, was an Englishman by birth, and spoke, in fact, nearly all the European languages. His father, he said, was one of a firm in a Dutch house in Europe, connected with one in Batavia; and he, preferring a roving life, acted for the firm in those seas. He was a fine, lively, intelligent young man, named Miller, and I was quite pleased with his acquaintance, particularly as I understood he was on terms of perfect friendship with the natives on shore, could go and come as he pleased in perfect safety, being under the protection of the chiefs.

Indeed, it is not to be wondered at he should be, when I tell you that, either through motives of love or speculation, this merry young gentleman married one of the daughters of the highest chief about the

Inlet, and was, of course, in high favour. At the time of our visit he enjoyed the felicity of having his second son born, half Papuan and half English — an extraordinary compound of humanity. But be this as it may, the novel alliance put our friends on terms of more than trading influence with the natives; was the cause of brooming out the Chinese from the Inlet, and monopolising the trade to themselves.

Captain Trainer informed Mr. Miller of my various adventures amongst natives of different islands, and love for exploration of strange places. This information, together with the fact of Miller being a practical naturalist, cemented a friendship between us that was the cause of his temporarily neglecting his part of the duties on board the Swerrer, and traversing the surrounding districts on shore with me in search of the curious. On the day of our arrival we did not go on shore, but Miller and I amused ourselves about the harbour and rocks fishing and shooting some sea fowl, &c.

In the evening we all dined on board the Swerrer, and a merrier set never sat round a mess-table. As the jolly Dutch captain's wines, &c. circulated freely, the party, of course, became elated and noisy, but all in perfect good humour with each other. The Dutch skipper first gave us one of his country songs,

which, of course, none of our side understood, but Miller pronounced it a good one. Stewart then commenced, the last singer being on his right and Trainer on his left, and gave us, in broad Scotch, Byrns's "Barley Bree." It was a truly amusing sight to see the three captains, with joined hands, singing the chorus, and Stewart's national warmth as he progressed in the song. As for my new friend Miller, he was so shaken by mirth and laughter at the sight, that he was glad when it was done to give him rest. He, in his turn, sang a wild plaintive Papuan song, which he said his wife had taught him. He accompanied the low gutteral sounds by beating his thighs with his open hand, thus keeping correct time.

Miller and I left the captains to finish the evening, while we went on board our vessel to arrange little matters for our morning's excursion on shore. It was near midnight before our tête-à-tête was over, and as my friend, Captain Trainer, had not returned, I accompanied Miller back to his vessel to look after him.

The scene was changed from the noisy animated mirth of the party when we left them, all was now nearly silence; the jolly fat Dutch skipper was stretched, athwartships, on the tronsom lockers, as

a city police would express it, "perfectly incapable." Stewart still occupied his chair, but leaned back supported by the bulk-head of the mess-room, his head inclined forward so much that his chin rested on his chest, his long legs were upon, and stretched (somewhat apart) nearly across the table, having a fair range between upset bottles, standing decanters, and broken glasses. Trainer occupied the Dutch skipper's arm-chair, and, though he had "a wee drop in his eee," yet he was "capable," and just as we entered the cabin he was smoking out of a huge pipe, and smiling blandly on the scene before him. We procured additional assistance, and placed the Dutch captain in his berth, and Stewart in another one close to him. Miller promised to have an eye to them. Trainer and I went on board our own vessel, he detailing to me the humourous part of the evening I had been absent. Thus ended our first day's acquaintance with our new friends.

At dawn of day the following morning Captain Trainer, his mate, and I were on deck. He ordered the men to be turned up, "All hands a-hoy below, tumble up!" which nautical phrases were accompanied by a loud thumping of a handspike on the deck over their heads, making noise enough of itself to wake heavy sleepers. After waiting a while, two

of the men struggled to get through the forehatch, and when they accomplished that feat, they were just able to stagger aft to the main deck. These were two of the oldest hands, prime seamen, and great favourites on board the Hound. None others appearing, Trainer accosted one of them with, "Why, men, you'r both drunk!" "We—we—are, sir." "And the rest of the crew?" "Whoy, them be worse, not able to turn out, sir." "Now, my men, you have sailed with me a long time, did I ever refuse a hand a glass of grog when he wanted it?" "No never, sir, to my knowledge." "And why did you all get drunk without my knowledge?" "Couldn't help it, sir."

Trainer pulled me by the sleeve, gave me a significant wink, and said, "It was pot and kettle from the captain to the cook, so he could say nothing about it." And turning round again to the men, "I will now forgive you all and give you this day to sleep it off, but you must tell me where you got the grog?" "If it must be out, it must, sir, to you. The boat's crew that pulled you and this here gentleman aboard the Dutch brig (and be d——d to her, savin' your presence) found out there was some genuine rack on board; so we manœuvres, and trades shirts and trousers with them for a lot of it,

and so that's all, sir." "Is there any of it left?" "Not a toothful, sir!" "That will do; go below again, both of you, and turn in." "Ay, ay, sir, and thankee."

We next got into the boat, and pulled ourselves alongside the Swerrer to visit our friends, and found them both sitting on the cabin deck glaring at each other, endeavouring to laugh, and employed drinking egg-flip of the Dutch captain's recommendation, which Stewart swore was the best stuff he ever tasted. By and by they were able to sit up, and we had breakfast, after which Miller and I left them to their peculiar amusements, and we prepared for our cruise on shore.

I was armed after my usual manner for the woods, double rifle, small axe, and long knife. Miller had an excellent double-barrelled plain bore, which he purchased a few years before in London. In fact, it was one of Manton's best. Also, a double-headed small axe, which he got made in Batavia after his own design, and a long double-edged knife. So we were a formidable-looking pair; our jackets, trousers, &c. strong enough to resist being torn by ordinary exertions through the bush.

Now, before I proceed I must tell you that Miller's better-half, on shore, had succeeded in teaching him

some of the Papuan Malay language. He partially understood most of the natives, and could convey his meaning to them tolerably well when he assisted himself by some of their expressive signs. So as soon as some of the canoes came alongside, he told them that there would be no trading that day, and to go off on shore and tell his friends he was coming. The canoes whirled round, and away they started, Miller detaining one belonging to some of his wife's relations for our special use. Having every thing in readiness, and our heads full of agreeable anticipations, we stept into the canoe and shoved off from our vessel.

The canoe was a fine lively one, at every stroke of the paddle it sprang forward over the surface of the water, but the native in it was an ugly fellow, naturally. His combed out hair, a huge bone and shell necklace, with an enormous tortoiseshell ornament hanging from his nose, moving to and fro as he paddled us along, gave him a savage, I may say frightful appearance, and just such an one, as our imagination might conjure up to be a fit and proper spirit to give us a shove across the "river Styx" into some hellish region.

We had to enter the mouth of a moderate-sized river, which had its rise (I understood) fifty or sixty miles in the interior; from the banks on either side,

wharfs or stages were stretched out into the river, and on these the houses of the Papuans were erected. They had all doors at the edge of the platforms facing the river, and the edge of the rooffing and thatch overhung the sides of the house fully six feet. This arrangement kept the houses cool, and allowed a shady lounge for the indolent native. The population of this town must have been considerable, as there was not less than two hundred of these large piers built out into the water, and six or eight houses on each of them. Here and there trees of gigantic growth towered high over the houses, casting a cooling shade over the surface of the river.

As we glided along, the river had all the appearance of some canal, with a range of storehouse sheds built on the wharfs. It brought to my mind some idea of the City of Canals (Venice), but the idea was a Papuan one, and I must be excused for mentioning it. There were many gondolas (canoes) moving about, the twang of the guitar string, with the accompanying song was wanting, but, as to savage-looking bravos there was no end to their numbers, peering out of the doorways and off the wharfs as we passed along scrutinising their city.

When better than half way through the town a platform, much larger than any of the rest, showed

itself prominently forward. On it there were four houses, and one of them, larger than the rest, presented (here) the unusual appearance of a shingle roof, the sides of it were shining yellow, from its being formed of the split bamboo. This house, or rather crib, was my friend Miller's, and our canoe had scarcely touched the landing when we were vociferously received by his savage relations.

The person of his father-in-law was particularly prominent in the group. He was a tall man, hair combed out about three feet from the head, light blue tattooing on his chest, sides, and legs; the tortoiseshell ring suspended from his nose was large enough to display his large mouth, with the red stained teeth. The matting round his waist was particularly fine, and ornamented with the bright coloured feathers of the lorie; the nails of his hands were particularly long, indicative of his high rank, as well as his never having been engaged in manual labour of any kind. In his right hand he held a beautifully carved and ornamented spear, and was altogether a splendid specimen of savageism; but with all this barbarous display, there was a kindness in his look that prepossessed me in his favour.

Miller's wife was squatted on a mat, with her infant son in her arms. She was fine featured,

rather tall, and more muscular than my friend, her English spouse. She was partly enveloped in a mantle of blue Surat cloth; several strings of bright blue china beads encircled her neck. She seemed to take great interest in her child, and her eyes glowed with delight in beholding its smiles.

The picture was sadly deformed by a broken-backed brother of her's who sat near her, grinning like a demon. You may guess the opinion I formed of this "Caliban," when my friend Miller told me he was guilty of every species of savage barbarity, cannibalism amongst the rest. Three comely young girls and four athletic lads made up Miller's friends and relations; and, after the introduction was over, I could not avoid congratulating him on his extraordinary alliance.

The articles in the houses generally consisted of calabashes, china ware, and pottery of Papuan manufacture, made by the women, who are generally very industrious, often wielding the axe whilst their husbands are fishing, hunting the wild hog, or engaged in war with some of the neighbouring tribes. After viewing the centre and suburbs of this Papuan town, I was accommodated with an apartment in Miller's house. The partition (if I

may so term it) consisted of a mat of cocoa-nut fibre suspended so as to form a separate room.

The four boys were very amusing, and as it was not quite sleeping time yet, I beckoned them into this apartment of mine, where the young urchins began and continued a wild Papuan dance, which highly diverted me, but annoyed my friend so much, that he bawled out, "For goodness sake hunt them out, and let's have quietness." The little fellows crouched and crawled out in silence, making all sorts of grimaces, and the buzzing of the mosquito alone disturbed me during the remainder of the night.

CHAPTER X.

SUNRISE IN NEW GUINEA. — A GATHERING OF SAVAGES FOR A WILD HOG HUNT. — WE PROCEED INTO THE INTERIOR. — SCENERY OF THE COUNTRY. — ARRIVAL AT THE CANE BRAKES. — PAPUANS AND THEIR DOGS BEAT COVER. — RUSH OF HOGS. — GENERAL CHACE AFTER THEM. — WILD SCENE. — MILLER AND I WARM TO THE SPORT. — TERMINATION OF THE HUNT. — OUR RETURN TO THE TOWN, AND RECEPTION. — MILLER'S ACCOUNT OF HOW HE AND THE DUTCH CAPTAIN MADE FRIENDS WITH THE PAPUANS. — WE SAIL OUT OF M'CLURE'S INLET. — STEER SOUTHERLY. — THICK WEATHER. — THE REPORT OF A GUN. — STEER FOR IT. — HAZE CLEARS OFF. — CAPTAIN STEWART'S BRIG ATTACKED BY MALAY PROWS. — WE RUN DOWN TO HER ASSISTANCE. — THE MALAY'S ATTEMPT TO BOARD THE BRIG. — OUR TIMELY AID. — ITS RESULTS. — OUR CREW ASSIST IN REPAIRING DAMAGES ON BOARD THE BRIG.

At daylight next morning I was aroused by the screaming of owls retiring to their shades, and the chattering of lories welcoming the coming day. I gave a whistle and told Miller to "turn out." He did so at once, and we ascended an eminence in the rear of the houses, where we enjoyed a scene that

was really enchanting. The dense haze, that was being rarified by the heat of the rising sun, raised bank after bank of thick fog that concealed the luxuriant vegetation from our view. Here and there the leafy tops of tall trees would appear and disappear, and again a puff of wind would drive along masses of the fog and display large patches of forest.

At last, the leaves on the tree tops that were visible began to flutter, the tops began to wave to and fro, and old Sol, rising in radiant magnificence, finished the affair so perfectly, that my friend Miller whistled, "See the Conquering Hero comes," with much extacy; and really it was no wonder, for the rapid change of the scene was astonishing. A luxuriantly surrounding forest, a glistening river beneath our feet, the thatched houses on the banks of the river, and, at last, the busy hum of the aroused natives. We gazed on the natural landscape until the warm rays of the sun penetrated our clothing, then the ideal passed into the natural man with Miller, and he exclaimed, "We had better go down to the houses and have something for breakfast."

The practical young man, or the romantic young lady, might say "It's a pity to disturb the scene;" but this is all by the way, as I believe the practical world will tell us, that as soon as the sun elevates

himself above the horizon, and darts his rays through the depths of the forest and ocean, the fishes of the deep, the fowls of the air, and the men, and beasts that crawl on the earth, look for food.

Miller and his Papuan father-in-law resolved that a wild hog hunt should be the sport of the day: accordingly, after the morning meal, a number of "gongs" (purchased from a China trader), beaten with great energy, announced that a gathering of the natives was required for their usual sport. As I said before, the various tribes of Papuans never leave their towns on sporting or fishing excursions, except in force, lest a neighbouring tribe may attack them. So, on this occasion, we mustered a force of over two hundred men, and they were as wild-looking a set of savages as any one might desire to gaze upon.

They divested themselves of all ornaments, except that dangling from their nose; but that they could not well, as it became a fixture after its first arrangement; in fact, after one portion passed through the cartilage of the nose, the other was riveted to it. The frizzled out hair was also bound close to the head by a piece of cloth, to prevent it getting entangled in the bushes or reeds; and to complete all, they oiled their skins, to prevent the sun acting too

much on it: this gave their black skins a shining appearance, as if they were varnished. Their arms consisted of bows and arrows, and the hog-spear, a short but very effective instrument for the purpose, pointed with iron.

A sporting yell was given at starting. We ascended the river several miles in canoes; the banks of the river were covered with heavy timber, which partially shaded us, but the denseness of the foliage shut out the view of every thing else. At last we arrived at the open country, and dead flats, extending miles from the banks of the river, backed by lofty hills, richly wooded, opened to our view. Here we all disembarked, and the canoes were safely moored until our return.

We had a pack of fine strong dogs with us, of a very peculiar breed: they were large, black-skinned, with scarcely any hair on, similar to the one in central America; did their work almost in silence, giving only an occasional yelp, like that of a small hound. The scene was novel, and animating in the extreme, as men and dogs started off at a quick pace over a fine level plain, richly clothed with rank grass. This part of our march frequently brought to my recollection portions of priarie I had passed over in North America, as the plain was frequently inter-

rupted by deep gullies or ravines that could not be seen until we were nearly on their brink: then our whole party would dive down at a convenient place, disappear for a while, then ascend the opposite side, and continue our course on the plain again.

Thus we went on for a few miles, until we arrived near the foot of the range of hills, and verge of extensive forest patches, and cane breaks. When near the latter, the men were sent round, in parties of fours and sixes, to encircle it; at this part of the proceeding, we could occasionally plainly hear the occasional grunt of a wild hog. Miller and I, with his relatives, and other grandees of this tribe, stationed ourselves in the open plain, in front of the cane break, whilst a great majority of our party, with the dogs, were sent round by the wood to enter the canes, and drive the hogs down towards us. It took nearly an hour to complete the arrangements, before we saw the natives, in a scattered line, advancing through the canes.

Then the scene was particularly sportsmanlike and animating, when we saw the black heads and shoulders of the men popping up here and there; heard the occasional yelp of a dog, and saw the canes bend in rows, as the hogs rushed before those who beat the cover. The noise became greater as

the lines advanced, and the men shouted lustily. By and by the grunts of the hogs became more audible, and a signal was passed along our party on the plain to be ready. One hog rushed out foaming at the mouth, and dashed through our party, but was soon pierced by an arrow, which disabled him; another, and another, ran past, and were served in a similar manner.

One large fellow, with bristles on end, rushed out; and in his passage nearly upset me, at which my friend Miller laughed heartily. It was new game for me; and I confess I felt as nervous, with my finger on the trigger, as a boy would on his first essay at snipe-shooting, gaping at them without the power of firing. Miller said, if we went on this way we would be in disgrace with the natives: so we both resolved to do our share of the work. At this time the hogs began to dash out of the canes in numbers, and the arrows and spears were at work on every side.

One shot from Miller knocked one over; my gun another; second barrels with similar result; reload and fire as fast as we can with satisfactory results. Steady hands — and good aim, — now warm to the work. Hundreds of hogs rushing past with bags of foam hanging from their jaws, as if suspended from

their formidable tusks. The whole line of men that drove them out were now close to; and as the last of the hogs left the cane-brake, they all rushed out with such a wild yell over the plain after them, that one would think heaven and earth had a collision.

"Hurra!" shouted Miller, as he and I rushed after the throng of men, dogs, and hogs, now and then stopping to fire amongst the galloping herd of swine; the natives yelling wildly, rushed in the most fearless manner after the fiercest boars, and finished them with the spear. The chase continued until we neared another cane-brake, and, as we were all done up by the excitement and race, we made a halt, allowing the hogs to run into it without further molestation. The line of our chase after the herd, from the edge of the cane-brake where we were first parted, until we allowed them to escape, was literally strewed with wounded and dead hogs, some of a most formidable appearance.

They were collected in heaps as we retraced our steps to our first position, then our friends brought from the adjoining forest plenty of wood, fires were lighted quickly, hogs in dozens were singed and roasted, and we had a lord mayor's feast of it on the sweetest pork I ever tasted, aided by bread fruit,

which grew in the neighbourhood. After our party were well rested, poles were procured, as many hogs as the men could carry were slung, and we moved on in curious procession towards the place where the canoes were left. In returning, we took a nearer route, and passed through several clumps of trees, for the sake of their shade; here I had an opportunity of seeing the New Guinea wild cat, several of them I shot down from amongst the branches of the trees, and those that were merely wounded were instantly torn by the dogs.

They were generally of a blackish brown colour, large bodies, their fur covering thin, as generally all animals in warm climates have, tail short, and the smell from them was strong, similar to that from a fox. During the chase we lost several dogs by the boars; but that the Papuans seemed to expect, though they regretted it much, being warmly attached to this animal. In due time we arrived at the canoes, the hogs were stowed, and we embarked, the whole party paddling down the stream with a loud Papuan hunting chorus, which, with the exception of the sound, I could make nothing of.

The several canoes landed their men, and hogs, at their respective houses. Our state-canoe landed at Miller's wharf, where he was warmly welcomed by

his black wife, whilst soon after I received the congratulations (by signs) of this dignified family, having sustained my character with my rifle during the chase; and thus ended this Papuan wild hog hunt, which Miller vowed was glorious sport, and so it really was.

The following day, gangs of natives went off to the scene of our hunt, and continued to go and come until the entire of the dead hogs were brought to the town; and roast pork, with an abundance of bread fruit, plantains, &c., formed the bill of fare in every house for several days. The ships continued to trade with the Papuans in perfect harmony day after day, though I understood the Dutch skipper had the best of it, having procured a goodly quantity of gold dust of great purity.

Miller and I scoured the woods and country in all directions after game and specimens, going on board our respective vessels occasionally for a change of clothing. In conversation with him, as to how he at first ingratiated himself so completely with these generally hostile people, he informed me, that when they first arrived in M'Clure's Inlet, the natives showed every disposition to hostility, and the vessels lay several days refitting without a single canoe

coming alongside; at last a party, of the now friendly tribe, were out fishing round the point of the bay, and a neighbouring hostile tribe launched a great many canoes full of men, numbering ten times more than theirs, and gave chase in hopes of taking them.

The weaker party pushed hard for their own bay, and succeeded in rounding the point and coming in view of the vessel. They were closely pursued, as the more powerful party soon appeared in full chase. Our adventurous traders now thought this a good opportunity to make friends: indeed, if they did not interfere, the party would soon be captured, and that too, in sight of their own houses; so now both parties being within easy range of the Dutch vessel's guns, she opened a destructive fire of grape amongst the pursuers, which had such an effect, that few canoes escaped to round the point again; (by the bye, the Dutch are not over scrupulous about the lives of natives in those seas, provided their ends are accomplished).

In a few hours after, several canoes came off to the vessel, loaded with presents of hogs, bread fruit, &c., as an offering of friendship and gratitude for saving the people. Since then, perfect harmony existed between Miller's vessel and this tribe; and to seal the friendship, my friend, as I said before,

allied himself to them, his father-in-law being one of the party saved.

Subsequent to this business, several Chinese junks came and dropped their anchor; but the Dutch being aware of their lying propensities, treated them rather unceremoniously, and ordered them off on pain of being sunk by the guns of the Swerrer; thus, our new friends not only secured the friendship of the tribe, and trade of the best part of the Inlet, but compelled the Chinese junks to abandon all thoughts of trading with the natives hereabouts.

During the remainder of our stay here, there was no incident of any consequence. Miller and I being at last tired of the woods, and foot-sore from tramping from morning till night through the country, betook ourselves to our vessels, and afterwards passed the remainder of the time together fishing in the bay and offing; and we were very successful, particularly with the turtle, which abounded about the bay, frequently floating on the surface of the water in calm weather, sunning themselves. This amusement of ours supplied the vessels with excellent fish of various kinds, to the great satisfaction of the crews. All matters being finally arranged to the mutual satisfaction of the natives and ourselves, Captains Stewart and Trainer got under

weigh, and bidding Miller and our Dutch friends farewell, by firing a salute and giving hearty cheers, we sailed out of the Inlet after enjoying the satisfaction of trading with the fierce Papuans on friendly terms, without the usual occurrence of a fight for it.

After leaving M'Clure's Inlet we steered to the southward; but in consequence of baffling winds and hazy weather were obliged to keep under easy sail, as the currents here were very strong, and setting chiefly to the westward, though sometimes we imagined it was running one way and then another; and, to make matters doubly unpleasant, the wind died away and left us becalmed and at the mercy of the current, in an intricate and little known position. We ascertained the vessels were setting to the westward, towards the island of Ceram, though it was with difficulty we obtained an observation, in consequence of the thick weather, and the vessels were hidden from each other by the haze.

One day, about 3 P.M., the loud report of a gun told us that our friend Stewart was not far off; but the nature of the sound told us also that the gun was shotted. Another report, quickly followed by several, informed us that something was wrong with our friend, and made us all anxious for him. The little wind there was began to increase, and we took ad-

vantage of it by making more sail and steering in the direction of the firing, which continued without intermission. The increasing breeze drove the fog before us and every moment we had a more distinct view. At last our friend's vessel came boldly into sight and instantly told us all. He was attacked by four large Malay prows, whose bow-guns were pouring their shot into the bows and hull of Stewart's vessel, who could only return the fire from two guns. When Trainer saw how matters stood he became greatly excited, instantly shortened sail, and loaded our guns with grape and round-shot, and the small arms were passed to those who were not at the guns. We were to windward at the time the scene first presented itself to us, so we bore up and ran down close to Stewart's vessel, just at the time when two of the prows had ranged up alongside to board him.

"Luff." "Luff—it is, sir." "Are you ready there on the larboard-bow?" "Ay, ay, sir." "Point fair for the two fellows a-head of him." "True aim, sir." "Fire!" "Load again!" "Ay, ay, sir." "Keep your luff, my man, shake her up in the wind. Now then!" This second two rounds told fearfully amongst the Malays, who had the impudence to point their prows at us and fire their bow-guns. Two rounds more of grape, and

two of round-shot, made them slew round quick enough. Still the other two prows daringly kept their position alongside and were endeavouring to board. Stewart had taken the men from the two guns, as he required every one to repel boarders. We saw his critical position, and Trainer put the helm up, ran down, and luffed up in his wake.

We now had the prows fairly open to our bow-guns, but we forged a-head a little to make sure of not damaging our friend's brig. The Malays were as thick as bees on the sides of the vessel; indeed, they appeared so intent on their work, that they did not seem to observe our movement; but they soon found out their mistake, as we poured round-shot right through their prows, letting in the water pretty fast upon them. The bow-rope of one of them, that made her hold on to Stewart's vessel, was shot away, and she drifted astern and close to us, with only a few hands in her. Trainer pointed one of the guns so that a heavy discharge of grape literally tore the bottom out of her: an unearthly scream of despair followed: she quickly filled and sank, with her four-pounder brass-gun in her bows, and the few wretches that were in her were shot by our small-arms men. The remainder of her crew, who were yet clinging to the vessel's side, seeing how matters stood made a

desperate effort, and a few succeeded in making the deck and killing two of Stewart's men.

"So much for the larboard side," said Trainer. "Now for the gentlemen on the starboard side, luff her up a bit." "Ay, ay, sir." "Are you ready?" "Yes, sir." "Fire right into them!" The round-shot tore fore and aft the prow, killing several, and capsized their bow-gun. They cast her off, endeavouring to escape; but it was of no use, as our friend, now being comparatively free, pointed his two guns double-shotted, and their discharge made fearful holes in the prow's bottom.

This was repeated, and the prow was filling fast. Stewart's two guns had now finished their work, and his crew amused themselves picking off the luckless Malays as they either clung to their sinking vessel or were swimming about. They showed daring to the last, and never asked for quarter. The two that we fired at first were hard at work with their sweeps and were fast escaping. We luffed up and made all sail in chase, and when within range fired several round-shot after them. This chase continued for some time, when the fog cleared away altogether, and to our amazement displayed the land close to the prows, which, of course, now escaped, as we could chase

them no further, and they soon disappeared behind some high rocks.

The vessel was put about and steered for our rescued friend, who when we came up with him warmly expressed his gratitude to us all; but his vessel was in a sad plight and required immediate attention. His bows were literally carved and bored by the shot of the Malay prows, and what was worse, they bored him under the water line, and he was leaking fast. The carpenter and several of our men went on board him to shift the cargo aft, so as to raise her wounded bows out of the water, in order the more conveniently to plug up the shot-holes. With a hearty goodwill on the men's part, and great exertion, the leak was stopped in about four hours, and both vessels filled away again, to gain an offing from the land that was seen so close.

The Malays who manned the prows appeared to be a hardy, athletic set of men, and seemed to have daring enough for any exploit. They were of a dark brown complexion, had a kind of turban on their heads of blue cloth, and a fold of the same round the waist, something like a Highlander's kilt, kept up about the waist by a belt or sash of cloth. Their arms were pikes, a few pistols, and the deadly "creese," a long curved dagger, an instrument of

formidable appearance, and deadly effect in close combat. The gun they had fitted on a strong platform in the bow of the prow; but we had no opportunity of examining it, as all sank when the vessel was destroyed. It was the opinion of both Stewart and Trainer that they belonged to the islands more to the westward, were cruising piratically about here for the present, and had merely taken temporary refuge at the island of Ceram.

CHAPTER XI.

WE STEER IN AGAIN FOR NEW GUINEA.—BOTH VESSELS ENTER A RIVER.—AN ACCOUNT OF IT AND THE ADJACENT COUNTRY.—CAPTAIN TRAINER, WITH FOUR MEN, AND I START OFF ON AN EXPLORING EXCURSION.—THE COUNTRY.—NIGHT ENCAMPMENT.—OUR ADVANCE INTO THE FORESTS.—ARRIVE AT THE BANK OF A STREAM.—ENCAMP TO REFRESH OURSELVES.—THE COUNTRY OF THE HARRAFORAS TRIBES.—AN UNEXPECTED GUEST.—A WHITE MAN CHIEF OF A TRIBE OF HARRAFORAS.—AN ACCOUNT OF THIS STRANGE RACE OF SAVAGES.

We now steered to the eastward and southward, in order again to sight the land of New Guinea; but, for Stewart's sake, went along under easy sail, to allow him time to repair his damages as well as he could. The lanyards of his fore rigging, fore stay, and gammoning of his bowsprit, were all shot away and disabled, so that his masts were endangered going over the side, and his bowsprit of being unshipped: a casualty which any one that understands anything about the matter knows well to be not a

very pleasant affair for a vessel in a seaway. However, some of our jolly dogs remained on board him, worked "with a will," and in a couple of days he could "crack on" again in safety.

We sighted the land again in latitude 4° south, and ranged along it in a south-east direction. This course brought us on the south-western coast of this large island, where there is a deep curve in the land, forming, as it were, a bay of great extent. At the time of our visit the sea was unusually smooth, and we were enabled to keep close in. Every night we could distinctly see the play of a volcano in the interior; and they must be large ones, as the flames thrown out, changing their colour, were distinctly visible.

In latitude 6° south we first discovered a river of apparently considerable magnitude, as the entrance to it was nearly half a mile across: into this we steered, the Hound leading the way, having a lighter draft of water than Stewart's vessel. We were under easy sail, and the usual precaution of keeping the lead going was not unattended to. The soundings right in were regular and deep. The country along the banks of the river was thinly wooded; but the trees were tall, magnificent-looking, and bore every resemblance to the gum tree of Aus

tralia. Many of them, near the river's bank, certainly were not less than from one hundred to one hundred and fifty feet high.

The bank of this large stream was low, occasionally rocky, and the plains about had the appearance of being periodically flooded. There was a total absence of all houses, and no appearance of any inhabitants about. We ascended this river with a fine steady breeze, without any obstruction in navigating it for four miles; still the soundings were regular, the breadth of the river now about a quarter of a mile.

The curiosity of both Trainer and Stewart, indeed I may add us all, was excited by the facility of navigating this river, and the non-appearance of inhabitants; so we filled away again, and continued our course for three miles further up, where the river narrowed considerably, yet plenty of water for the two vessels. Here the timber thickened, forming large patches of magnificent forest, and mountain piled on mountain towered over each other in great grandeur in the interior. About thirty miles distant from us, in an easterly direction, a high peaked mountain was sending up thick volumes of black smoke, evidently a volcano of great magnitude.

Both vessels were now slewed round, heading

down stream again; and having chosen a position where the trees were open on the banks, were safely moored in a line. "Now," said Trainer, "here we are, as the clown says in the ring, not a sign of an inhabitant; what shall we do next?"

"Why," said I, "land with our guns, and have a cruise through the woods."

"Not a bad idea either; so we will," said my ready friend.

"Stewart, will you join us?"

"No, Trainer: not this day, as I want to put this old craft of mine in thorough repair; there's more carpenter's work to be done on board, after them d——d Malays, than I expected."

Although Trainer liked the idea of a run ashore, yet he had no intention of starting without seeing that every precaution was taken on board his vessel, to avoid any thing like surprise; so the boarding nettings were triced up, the watches regulated, to have a look-out on deck, that could be depended on; and he told Stewart that, as the woods were near, natives might be in them, and not yet appear; and in case of any attack in our absence, to use the guns of the Hound in defence of the vessels.

Having selected four active young men from our crew, and furnished them with guns, &c., we landed

on the south bank of the river, and shaped our course over a plain, on which there were a few scattered clumps of trees, in the direction of a mountain range a few miles off. As we went along, this part of the country brought at once to my mind some of the plains of Australia: trees were far apart, and the grass had a dry burnt-up appearance. In some places the soil was black, deep, and excellent; in others, poor and sandy acres of broken stony ground, with here and there large dried-up water-holes.

Snakes were numerous, and of a large size, but very timid, and getting out of our way as fast as they could; I saw none of a venomous kind. Rats of an enormous size, indeed as large as an ordinary sized cat, of a brown colour, were in great numbers about the water-holes. Watching their manœuvres afforded some fun to the men as they sat up scratching themselves; looking at each other occasionally, as if they held a meeting, and were deliberating on some matter of importance. They were not as timid as the snakes, for our visit did not seem at all to disconcert their arrangements; so we let them alone and pushed on. In the clumps of trees there were a great many wild cats, a few of which our men shot down; as we neared the hills the ground became undulating and broken, forming deep stony gulleys,

which made our travelling very tedious and fatiguing.

At last, having arrived near the foot of the mountain range, we fell in with several large water-holes, nearly filled with pure fresh water; and on the surface of them were large flocks of wild ducks of a dark plumage. All of us fired amongst them and killed a goodly number, which two of our men collected by swimming after them; they were soon plucked, a fire lighted, and we enjoyed a halt and our mess of game. The rats came daringly round us for a share, and the annoyance was so great that we compromised matters by casting two or three ducks some distance off for their special use.

The lizards about the water-holes were beautifully variegated on their bodies; but were of a large size, the body alone, independent of the long tail, was fully twelve inches; and I perceived some of them occasionally to enter the water and keep under its surface for some time. Large black hawks and lories were numerous amongst the trees. A stunted specimen of the prickly pear-tree grew up from amongst the rocks and stones here and there. Altogether this region had a parched up appearance, which stamped it in our minds as an uninhabitable one. We did not ascend the hills, but kept along their

base, in a north-easterly direction, towards the thick forests, in search of a more pleasant-looking part of the country.

This change of route led us towards the dense forests and a bend of the river, in which our vessels were anchored lower down. Trainer began to tire of this tramping over stones, broken lava, and blocks of pumice-stone. The snakes were numerous, writhing amongst the stones. Some of them were as thick as a man's thigh, and about ten feet long. We killed several by getting behind and hitting them with a stick or an iron ramrod, on the side of the neck. When near the margin of the forest, the ground became less stony, and a rich black mould, throwing up immense vegetable matter, presented itself to us; but the most remarkable feature in our route was, the discovery of a sheaf of arrows with bow, &c., which told us at once the inhabitants were not far off.

The sun huge, and tropically red, had dipped into the ocean in the distance, and we encamped under a large tree for the night. Now, a night in Papua in the forest, is somewhat different from one in Old England. The dense clouds of mosquitos, the enormous bats, the immense owls glared so amazingly on us, that we lost several choice rifle-balls in firing at

them. The snakes, too, in numbers writhed about our "location," as my friend Jonathan calls it, so that it was altogether not a pleasant bivouac; but the clear sky above us, with all its magnificent stars, told us that the Great Spirit was every where, and shielded us in this wild country, as well as the rest of humanity elsewhere.

As for our day's work, I must say we took the practical advice of Isaac Watts: "Dig, and draw up some valuable meditations from the depths of the earth and the water; extract some intellectual improvement from the minerals and metals; from the wonders of Nature among the vegetables and herbs, trees and flowers; learn some lessons from the birds, beasts, and meanest insects; read the wisdom of God and his admirable contrivance in them all; read his high Almighty power, his rich and varied goodness in all the works of his hands."

We were unusually fatigued by the exercise we had enjoyed; so, having arranged our turns for watching during the night, all of us, except the guard, lay down with our feet to the log-fire (Indian fashion), and our loaded guns within our grasp, and slept soundly until sunrise next morning.

The state of our guns being carefully examined, we advanced into the forest; but kept the more open

part of it, avoiding the thickets or jungles, lest we might fall into an ambush, for there was every sign of inhabitants not far off, both in the foot-marks and the number of them. "Now, my lads," said Trainer, "keep a weather-eye open, and a ready hand." So our guns were held in our hands, much after the manner of an Englishman in a marsh, expecting a snipe to get up every moment. We spread our small party out so as to form an irregular line of about forty yards.

As we went on, this forest-ground became undulating and very beautiful: the earth was a rich deep mould, covered with a scanty herbage; but in some places we had to wade knee-deep through beds of decayed leaves. Sometimes mounds of large stones and rocks would break our line; at others, rocks, cone-headed and round, would rear themselves up three or four hundred feet high, rendering the scenery varied and pleasing. As we continued our march, the swells of land rose higher, forming deeper valleys, and not unfrequently rough stony ravines. After about five hours' tramp, we ascended to the top of a high hill, on which there were but few trees, but covered with a long coarse dried-up grass. The head of this eminence was a level of about one mile across: on we went over this, as it were, plain,

when a magnificent view burst upon us, beneath our feet.

At the termination of the hill, which formed a gradual slope of easy descent, a small clear river wound its way tortuously to the greater one, which was plainly visible about four miles off; beyond this small stream the country, away to the southward (as far as the eye could see), was level, with meadow-like land, and clumps of tall trees scattered about at considerable distances apart from each other, giving it an English park-like aspect, yet no appearance of inhabitants. It was determined to descend the side of this hill, which was covered with brushwood and small reeds, to the banks of the stream and make a halt. So down we went in closer order than before, and were frequently startled by the grunt of a wild hog, as he dashed out of our way. When near the foot of the hill, and banks of the stream, the ground became more level and the hogs plentiful.

"I say," said Trainer, "before we go further we may as well try and shoot down some fresh pork for our mess." We stopt to arrange ourselves, then every man went forward cautiously. In a few minutes we came on a herd of them close to us, and a general volley followed, which killed one dead, and wounded

others that escaped us; however, the one killed was sufficient for our party.

Sailors are generally very pleasant when (though fatigued) there is a prospect of resting themselves, and the means of a fresh mess in their possession; so the dead hog was quickly lugged down with great glee to the banks of the stream, a fire soon made of dried wood and canes, he was quickly singed, and each man cut off a piece wherever he pleased (Captain Trainer and I getting the preference); the stakes, and, I may add the junks, of the dead grunter were soon on the ends of sticks and roasting, each man cooking his own share; and I must say a merrier set of cooks never was; when all was done, there was a look round, to see if any addition could be made to the mess. A few wild plantains were seen not far off, — soon obtained, — speedily roasted, and we sat on the grass close together, and enjoyed as sweet pork-steaks as could be found anywhere.

Whilst engaged in this agreeable occupation, a man of wild and strange appearance, with a hog-spear in his hand, and a large dog at each side of him, was observed walking towards us; we all started to our feet, gun in hand. As the land far beyond him was clear of forest, or cover of any kind, we allowed him to approach near to us, and to our amazement

discovered that he was a white man! only well browned by exposure to the sun; he was tall, very athletic; his long brown hair hung low on his shoulders, divided at the forehead, so as to allow a bold, open, manly face to show itself between each portion of it. His only garment was a small mat round his loins.

"In the name of all that's happy," said Trainer, "who are you?"

"I'm a Horrifory."

"A what?"

"A Horrifory" — (meaning a Horrafora.)

"I'm king of a tribe of Horrifories now; my people's not far off; but tear-an-agers, gintlemen, di yees think I was always here? No, be me sowl, I wasn't; I was born in the ould country, I mane ould Ireland, and that's all about it now. Have yees any of the dead pig left? I'll taste some first, and tell yees my whole histhory afterwards; for throth I'm tired and hungry after some divarshion among the wild pigs."

Whilst this strange being is voraciously devouring some of our mess, it may not be amiss to mention circumstances which my observation afterwards told me to be a fact, that Papua, or New Guinea, has in its wild aboriginal state two distinct races of human

beings, each differing from the other completely in colour, decorations of their persons, habitations, savage code of laws, &c.

The Horraforas, which inhabit chiefly the interior, south-west, and southern shores, differ widely from the Papuan—in fact, are a distinct race; and it is strange that these two races should exist on the same island in their wild state. They are only similar in one particular, and that is that both Papuan and Horraforas live in separate tribes, frequently speaking a different language; and not unfrequently one tribe of each will be at war with another of its own race.

I had no proof that the Papuans are cannibals; but I had ocular demonstration to tell me the Horraforas are, men, women, and children. The latter have a horrible custom, I believe peculiar to themselves; a young man, before he can possess his bride, must present her with a human head, which must not be mutilated, but, on careful examination of it by her family, bear the true marks and ornaments of one of an enemy. For this purpose, two or three young men who wish to have a wife, will start off in the direction of the enemy's tribe, and be out, perhaps two months, sculking about before they can surprise one of the enemy, and possess themselves of the desired head, which, when obtained, is carefully enveloped

in damped leaves, then a deep covering of grass, and rolled over and over with twine or cord made of cocoa-nut fibre sinnet, so that it looks like a large ball. In the march home it is frequently dipped in water, to prevent decomposition as much as possible, until the presentation of it to the family of the intended bride.

I happened to see two young men, who had been nearly three months away, return after an expedition of this kind. They certainly must have been greatly attached to their sweethearts, for their sufferings were great; patches of their skin were torn off by the bushes, portions of it raised in large blisters, by being obliged to lie hours in the grass under a burning sun, lest they might be seen. Sundry bites of snakes about the legs — in fact, they had suffered much, and traversed a distance of nearly three hundred miles, not on a railroad, or with shoes on, but on their naked feet, over a rough, ragged, barbarous country, "all for love."

As our strange wild guest has finished the operation of satisfying his appetite, I shall leave off a further account of the Horraforas, but continue it as we proceed on our route and arrive at their town.

CHAPTER XII.

TERRY CONNEL'S ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF.—HIS ADVENTURES AND VICISSITUDES, IN MANY PARTS OF THE WORLD, UNTIL THE PERIOD OF OUR ARRIVAL.—HIS NOW DIGNIFIED POSITION IN LIFE.—REMARKS ON WHITE MEN ADOPTING A SAVAGE LIFE.—KING CONNEL'S ADVICE TO US.—A DANGEROUS LOCALITY.—WE FOLLOW CONNEL—HIS CAUTIOUS MOVEMENTS.—VARIED SCENERY.—WE ARRIVE WITHIN CONNEL'S LINE OF SCOUTS.—THE REASON WHY THE TRIBES KEEP OUT THEIR SCOUTS.—A POSSIBLE BAR AGAINST THE RESIDENCE OF MISSIONARIES IN NEW GUINEA.—THE PROBABLE SUCCESS OF A COLONY OF CHRISTIANS.

OUR guest, *alias* the king of a tribe of Horraforas, as he announced himself to us, commenced his history by telling us he was born in the county of Kerry, in Ireland, and his name was "Terence Connel." His people were all "dacent," and he was reared up as well as they could, until he was able to work for himself. One year, "the times being hard," and a young girl he loved fondly running away with a neighbouring "spalpeen," he took the advantage of his accidentally meeting with a recruiting party at a fair, and enlisted in a "marching ridgment," which

service, after a fair trial of nearly three years, he by no means admired: for as his regiment was ordered off for foreign duty, at the embarkation he took the liberty of remaining behind, and safely concealed himself in his native mountains for some time.

Now Terence, or Terry Connel, as he called himself, was not a man fond of inactivity, but policy compelled him to remain out of the gaze of the public, as he did not relish the idea of being taken as a "desarter at all, at all,"—being thus, as it were, imprisoned in his cave, until his patience was nearly exhausted, without having any other pastime than coming out during the day, sitting on a rock, and viewing the country, fields, and cabins, far away beneath him; and at night walking about looking at the moon and the host of stars that bespangled the heavens.

During one of these night excursions on the mountain side, he found himself surrounded by about a dozen of men with blackened faces, and guns in their hands. "Down on your knees till we shoot you," says one. "He's a b——y spy," says another. "Knock his brains out at once." "Arrah, gintlemen jewels, sure you wouldn't be after going to shoot poor Tarry Connel, that's hidin here these three months, without the benefit of clargy, for fear

of being taken as a desarther?" "Terry Connel?" says one; "Terry Connell?" says another. "Arrah, sthrike a light, boys," says one dacent fellow, "till we see his purty face, before we murther him." A light was struck, held up to Terry Connel's face, and he was instantly recognised by some of the "gintlemen with blackened faces," and joyfully welcomed back from "sodgerin" by the whole party. "Terry, will you list with us, and take the oath?" This being just the kind of midnight military life that suited Terry's present circumstances, he never hesitated, but became one of the gang, and was a decided acquisition to the party, from his superior drilling and use of the gun, obtained during his short military career.

After this he was engaged in many haggard, and house burnings, houghings of cattle, and sundry other midnight onslaughts. At last, after about two years of adventures, and a merry life in their retreat, they were one night engaged at their usual sport, setting fire to a house, when they found themselves surrounded by a party of military: the "midnights" turned their attention to the soldiers, tried to escape, and fired at them, but, unfortunately for them, the military fired with effect, as six of their party were shot dead, one wounded, and the rest instantly

handcuffed. They were soon in jail, tried, found guilty, and sent out beyond the seas to Australia for life, to serve in various capacities there, often with the ironed gang on the roads, &c., according to the opinions of the authorities there, as to their conduct after arrival.

Well, this sort of life did not please Terry Connel much, and less, some of his restive associates about Sidney and Macquarry harbour, particularly the unpleasant exercises at the latter place. So all being better conducted than usual for a while previous, to lull suspicion, got free, at least from their irons, laid plans, concealed some provisions and water for their further use, stole a large boat with mast and sail, and "begorra, eleven of us started in her at the risk of being retaken and sent to Norfolk Island."

The worthy King of the Horraforas tribe, at this part of his narrative, was greatly excited, and his detail of stealing out of Sidney Cove, and rounding the north head, was feelingly told; they then proceeded to the northward, close in-shore, lest they might be seen out further at sea. Night and day they worked hard at their oars, allowing one-third of their number to sleep at a time, until "a great storm entirely" blew them on with such fury, that all

agreed to run into some convenient nook out of its way.

At last they fell in with a cluster of islands, which, from his account of them, must have been the Northumberland Islands, which are situated in about 21° south latitude. They had been out long enough now; sailed and pulled at their oars so hard, that they were certain of being far to the northward of the colony. By the by, two of the party had been at sea, and had sufficient intelligence to know north, south, east, and west. Having chosen a pleasant-looking little island of the group, they ran their boat under the lee of it, where they were sheltered from the fury of the storm.

They then pulled their boat into a snug cove, secured her, and all landed in a state of great exhaustion; but they were free men, and that cheered their spirits. With their boat's sail, and some spare canvass, they made a tent, which was sufficiently capacious to sleep under; and in other respects made themselves as comfortable as they could. They kept regular watches to guard against surprise. They were all so worn out, that Terry thinks they slept for a week.

The island was well wooded, there were plenty of sea-fowl, and some land birds on it; these were

easily obtained, as six of the party had taken their master's guns and ammunition with them. The two seafaring men had not forgotten lines and fishhooks: thus they lived here on birds, fish, and turtle (for several came up on the beach), in very good style, and all in excellent spirits at their escape.

The refreshment procured at this island, in sight of the main-land, completely restored their strength, and gave them full vigour; and what was of great importance, saved their sea stock of salt-meat. In the centre of the island there was a deep pond of fresh water, the discovery of which crowned their wishes.

Thus they passed two months in comparative happiness, when a grand deliberation of the whole party, decreed that they should push on along shore to the northward, to some inhabited island, where they would be clear of Australia altogether. So having first provided themselves with fresh-water, and as much fresh provisions (such as they were using) as would keep a few days, they again made sail with a fresh breeze and fine weather.

After a run of a few days more to the northward, they arrived at the northern extremity of Australia, called "Cape York:" continuing on in as northerly a direction as they could, they crossed Torres Straits,

and made the land of New Guinea, to which they steered; and being at last close in, and amongst a range of mud-banks, they discovered the entrance to a river; into this they ran their boat in a reckless manner. The banks were covered with large trees, but no appearance of any inhabitants until they were about four miles inland. They had pulled their boat to the bank, and were about to land, when a horrid yell burst upon them.

Hundreds of frightful-looking savages appeared, "laid hold of our boat,—we fired at them,—it was the last effort," for in a few minutes the luckless party were (with the exception of two) pierced with arrows. Jim Hutton and Terence Connel were the two that escaped instant death. Perhaps the savages would not have been so precipitate had not five of their number fallen by the fire from the boat. The two captives were now bound hand and foot, put into the boat and carried further into the interior.

Their captors were Horraforas. Terence Connel and his companion in trouble were made slaves of and cruelly treated; but escaped, traversed in a sculking manner and in a most deplorable condition over a vast tract of country, they knew not where, and at last, in a most exhausted state, were captured by the tribe he now belongs to. Here a different fate

awaited them, as they were kindly received and well taken care of until their strength recovered, the savages believing they were something supernatural, as there were no ships near by which they could come.

The tribe was then at war, and to show their gratitude they joined the warriors, and being almost reckless of life, fought with such desperation in several of their skirmishes, that they gained the entire affection and admiration of the tribe. That war was ended by a great battle, in which the full force of each tribe was brought into the field. In this action Jim Hutton fell, pierced with arrows; and Terence Connel was left alone, without one to speak a word of his own language to.

The tribe now acted with additional kindness to the last man of the runaway convicts, gave him high rank, and finally, having full confidence in him, placed him in the dignified position of head chief, or king of the tribe. His majesty told his story with much feeling and force, and was listened to with every attention and all the interest that his career justly entitled him to; and after our party expressed their sorrow for all his troubles, he seemed feelingly thankful to us, and remained buried in thought for some time.

It is a well known fact, that on the various islands of the Pacific, wherever the runaway sailor or convict is residing amongst the natives, intermarries with them, and gets wrapped up in their interests, they are frequently a source of great treachery and mischief, as they apply their superior intelligence to arrange plans for the capture and plunder of ships; and, although they may not act themselves, they arrange every mischief for the savages to execute.

It is an undoubted fact, that when a white man becomes an outcast, lives with the natives, adopts their manner of life, he soon sinks into such a state of barbarianism, that he becomes the greater savage of the two, and in any transaction at such places visitors cannot be too much on their guard; for instances have occurred at the Fujee Islands, Navigators and other Islands, where the white man turned savage has thrown even his own countrymen and ships off their guard under a show of friendship, and left them exposed to the murderous attack of the infuriated native. We were therefore cautious in placing unlimited confidence in Terence Connel at first, though his friendship and conduct afterwards, proved to us that, though an outcast and now a savage, he was one of those isolated cases, where

true courage, strict integrity, and chivalrous friendship exists.

I say we hesitated at first to place confidence in him, or accept of his invitation to proceed with him to his tribe; but, situated as we were, night near at hand, the Horraforas not far off, together with the fact stated to us by Connel, that his tribe were at present at war with another on the opposite side of the river, and that probably, after night, the very spot on which we enjoyed our refreshing meal would be occupied with the scouts of either, armed with poisoned arrows, was altogether an argument sufficiently convincing to make us place ourselves under the protection of our new friend, the chief of the Horraforas.

"Gintlemen," said our guide and protector, "an' it's plasin to you all, I think we had betther be movin down, for troth and faith, it won't be safe travellin hereabouts much later." We took his advice, and he headed our party as guide. As we proceeded along he kept the more open forest, or conducted us circuitously to the open ground where there were neither trees, thicket, nor any other kind of cover, and the cautious manner in which he acted otherwise, stopping occasionally to look well ahead of us, as well as all round, made it evident

that we were traversing a part of the country where danger might be expected: so we kept our guns thrown forward ready for instant use.

The scenery as we passed along was beautifully varied: we might term it ruggedly wild. The trees were of magnificent height, some of them with stems of sixty feet high before a branch was thrown off, — timber capable of making splendid spars for a first-rate man-of-war: indeed, they closely resembled the pine-tree of New Zealand. There were other trees that contrasted strongly with the one I have mentioned, particularly a kind of mahogany tree: it had a very spreading branchy top, with a clean stem of not more than fifteen or twenty feet high, but of such enormous girth that it took four of us, with joined hands, to encircle it, and in some instances even that did not suffice. Its branches and thick foliage formed an agreeable shade for the birds, or lodging for the night, as they were full of them, particularly the black and red lorie, together with owls, &c., all of whom seemed to rest harmoniously together in this extensive common abode. The wild cat was plentiful here, and whole flocks of the birds of paradise whisked over our heads, flying very low, but fast, to their resting-place for the night.

At last, after an annoying, hurried, and zig-zag

march of it, he suddenly wheeled into a dark wood, and we no longer avoided any thicket that might afford a favourable spot for an ambush. We now proceeded straight on in the direction of the setting sun, and were soon not a little surprised to find ourselves within a line of scouts in close ambush, to all of whom, as we passed along, Connel spoke a few words, giving them directions of some kind or other. They were all armed with lances, a bow, and a kind of quiver full of arrows, fully five feet long, all of which were poisoned.

"We're safe now, Captain," said our guide; "we're within our own lines; these scouts are all my min, and a clane set of boys they are too. It's well, gintlemen," addressing us all, "that I'm with you, for if you'd come near this ambush unprotected, the arrows would be sticking in your blessed bodies as thick as pins in a pin-cushion; and yees not know where they came from. Look up into that tree, to the right, di yees see that brown-hided garsoon taking a look all over the country before the sun goes down? See him how he gapes across the river."

It was quite evident that Providence protected us here by the timely arrival of Connel, for it was the same route that we intended to have taken prior to bivouacking for the night. Our guns would have

availed us nothing, for the arrows would have killed us, without being able to discover an enemy to shoot at.

"Well, Captain, I suppose from seein all these boys of mine on the look-out, you think we're soon goin to have a bit of a row; but it's my opinion we're not; we live in sich a paceable counthry here, and the other tribes are so dacent and quiet! that every tribe of the Horraforas, ay, and the other black thieves too (meaning the Papuans), night and day, have their scouts out, for if they didn't, one tribe would break in on top of t'other, be murdherin man, woman, and child, and carrying off the rest to sell to the Chinese for slaves, all through divilment, or fair divarsion. So now, Captain, jewel, ye see the reason why the boys are out, and you may dipind on them, for divil a man of them will close an eye till he's relieved: if they would, they know well their tribe would hunt them clear of their lines; thin the inimy would pick them up; and in troth it woudn't be a change for the betther!"

This account from a man who had spent, up to the time of our visit, a great many years amongst these people, coupled with facts before our eyes, affords us correct information as to the dreadful manner in which these barbarian tribes prey on each other. If the Horrafora goes out on a hog-hunt or

fishing excursion, they go in force of at least two hundred men, fully equipped for actual warfare, in the way, as I have already stated, the Papuans do. What a rich country, and extensive one do these people possess! and how happy they might be, if they had only Christianity spread amongst them, and engraven on their hearts that they might dwell in peace and brotherly love!

On the other hand, I do not know how a missionary could remain amongst them, as the imperative law of every tribe, both of Papuan and Horrafora, is, that every man in the tribe must be a warrior, take his turn with the scouts, either fight, or be armed, and ready to do so. If this (I may say) rigid law is infringed upon by any man, he is instantly disgraced in his tribe, hunted clear of the line of scouts, where he is captured by another tribe, sold as a slave, or if he resists, killed and eaten. This is a great bar against the residing amongst these savages of the mild and meek minister of the word of God. I rather think that an armed colony of Christians, in goodly numbers, must first plant themselves on the shores of New Guinea; and show and teach these ferocious barbarians the decided superiority of a Christian community over the heathen tribes, in every relation of life.

CHAP XIII.

PUSH ON FOR THE TOWN. — A PRIMITIVE FERRY. — ARRIVE AT THE TOWN. — CONNEL'S WELCOME. — PECULIARITY OF THE HOUSES CONSTRUCTED IN THE TREES. — CURIOSITY OF THE HORRAFORAS TO SEE US. — EFFECT OF TORCHLIGHT AMONGST THE TREES. — CONNEL'S HOSPITALITY. — A DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWN. — METHOD OF ERECTING THESE CURIOUS ABODES. — DOMESTIC UTENSILS. — THE HORRAFORA TRIBES IN PEACE AND WAR. — THE WOMEN. — COSTUME OF BOTH SEXES. — THEIR AMUSEMENTS, ETC. — AN ENEMY'S SCOUT KILLED AND BROUGHT INTO TOWN. — HOW OUR FRIENDS DISPOSE OF THE BODY. — WAR BETWEEN THE TRIBES. — WE ARE DELAYED IN THIS TOWN. — A PEEP AT THE ENEMY. — A SPECIMEN OF THE POISON USED ON ARROW HEADS. — A GRAND ENTERTAINMENT. — HORRAFORA DANCING AND MUSIC.

AFTER leaving the scouts Connel led us on through a magnificent forest of tall timber, tolerably open, and clear of all underbrush. It was now nearly dark; however, an hour's march through this wood brought us out into a more clear space, and to a small tributary of the large river. This was crossed on a raft made of poles and flags, fitted up and left there for the accommodation of passengers, with a

rope of cocoa-nut fibre attached to it, on each side of the stream, so that any one arriving at either bank, and wishing to cross, might haul it over to himself. This was a contrivance of Connel's, for the accommodation of his people, and we gave him every credit for so praiseworthy and useful an invention.

Having practically tested the value of this novel ferry, we moved on. The ground all about was clothed with grass; and a-head of us a long, low, rounded hill, with a level top, presented itself boldly in view: it seemed covered with timber of moderate height, which, on approaching, closely resembled the largely spreading beech-trees of England. Connel told us this was his town. Indeed, the various noises of the inhabitants became more distinct every moment. Having followed closely on the heels of our guide, along a well-trodden pathway, or rather road, for it was very wide, we soon arrived on the eminence, which we found to be, for about half a mile either way, a perfect level. Lights were flitting here and there amongst the trees, against each of which a notched pole, or kind of ladder, rested.

We passed on until we arrived under an immensely spreading tree. "Now," said the chief, "we are at home, and you 'll soon see my people, and know how we live; and all I have further to say

now is, that yee're all welcome." He put his little finger curved into his mouth and blew a loud, but shrill whistle. He was answered by hundreds similarly. "That's a trick (meaning the whistle) I taught my min." By and by, flambeau after flambeau flitted down the pole out of the trees, and soon the whole wood was grandly illuminated by hundreds of torches borne by the natives, and all wending their way towards where we stood. The people of all ages and sexes seemed to gather so quickly and in such dense crowds, that Trainer asked Connel how many did his tribe muster. "Well, captain, I'll tell you,—over two thousand warriors, plenty of women, and, be dad, children to no ind!"

The crowds of people who through curiosity were closing in to have a close view of us, would certainly have crushed us all, were it not for the timely interposition of Connel's decided authority over them. He seemed to speak the language of the people fluently; and after some observations to them concerning us, gave one sharp order, with a stamp of his foot on the ground, and the dense mass of savages fell back and afterwards observed a respectful distance. The torches were so numerous, that Trainer remarked to me, he "Never saw old Vauxhall Gardens better lighted up."

Every object around was distinctly visible, even to the bright green leaves on the trees, and what astonished us most was their plan of building the houses amongst the branches; the notched stick was the ladder to go up and down by. In fact, they were like crows in a rookery; for they had their houses, or rather nests, up in the trees; and after each family retired for the night, the pole also was hauled up, to guard against surprise. Connel made Trainer and me ascend into his house, having first bundled out a lot of children.

The inhabitants of two neighbouring houses were ordered by the peremptory Connel to quit, and our four men were housed, two in each nest. Then, with all the warmth of an Irish heart, did this poor outcast place before every one of us an abundance of pork, bread-fruit, young cocoa-nuts, plantain, and the sap of sugar-cane, &c., and told us to make ourselves as snug as we could among the savages. "If he had betther, he'd give it to us; and we might sleep sound too, for wee'd be well guarded." We first really and heartily enjoyed our supper, and afterwards, perhaps as sound a sleep as any white men ever did amongst the barbarians of New Guinea.

Shortly after sunrise, being well refreshed by sleep, we got up, and were glad to descend from

our elevated dormitory. Our friendly host (Connel) was waiting for us, with water in calabashes, and an excellent morning meal, similar to our supper the previous evening. This being over, we enjoyed the cool refreshing breeze of the morning in walking through this town of Horraforas. What appeared in the dusk of the evening to be a hill now proved to be an extensive elevated plain, commanding a distant view of the surrounding country, and covered by these spreading trees in which the natives build their sleeping apartments, for they did not appear to be for any other purpose, as the people eat their food on the ground underneath.

These peculiar abodes were made or constructed by thinning some of the branches that were inconveniently situated; then long stout poles were stretched across the lower or stouter branches of the tree; uprights are then obtained, one end of which must be forked, so as to rest on and catch the lower branches; the upper end is lashed with cocoa-nut fibre rope to the more elevated ones. This is the most important part of the architecture, as the sides and ends are formed simply by ranges of large bamboo and lashed firmly together, forming a very close partition. The roofing is also of cane, covered by sheets of thick bark sewed together, which makes

this abode perfectly tight in wet weather, or during the heavy rains that fall here periodically. The flooring is closely laid, with split bamboo and pieces of light dried wood. Being so elevated, of course the wind would penetrate through both flooring and partition, but for the precaution of lining both floor, sides, and ends, with a stout thick matting, which makes the inside quite warm during the prevalence of cold winds.

At one end of this house, is an opening or door; in fact, the whole much resembling a large dog-house. The shape of these peculiar habitations varies according to the natural arrangement of the branches of the trees in which they are built. Sometimes they are nearly square; at others, long and narrow; and, not unfrequently, where there is a suitable layer of lower branches, they encircle the tree and form an extensive house. As to extent of room, the smallest of these will measure sixteen feet either way, that is, when they are square; but in other instances, when they are long and narrow, or encircle the tree, two or three times that extent of room exists. The flooring is perfectly safe to walk about on, for the lower branches, on which this edifice securely rests, are as large as the stem of an ordinary-sized tree.

The only domestic utensils I saw in any of the houses were, numerous calabashes, with curious hieroglyphics on them, for holding both food and water; carved and polished cocoa-nut shells for drinking goblets, and a portable slung water bottle, capable of containing a quart of water, for carrying with them on expeditions of any kind. This was nothing more than a long joint of the large bamboo, handsomely ornamented by burning various devices on its surface; to the open end, a bung made of soft wood was closely fitted, and when it was slung over the shoulders, it remained dangling by the left side. All warriors have them, and each of the scouts carries one, as he cannot leave his ambush to procure water otherwise.

As I said before, the Horraforas are a distinct race from the black Papuan. The people we are now with are not black, but of a light brown colour; the hair coarse, long, and jet black, hanging over their shoulders and divided at the forehead; the features broad, high cheek bones, bold full black eye, particularly expressive under excitement of any kind. The size of the men varies as in all other countries. Some gigantic fellows, and some diminutive; some robust and very athletic, others thin and slight; but I saw none that could be termed corpulent. All of

them, old and young, were particularly active in their movements.

The ornaments worn were few, in comparison to what the Papuan uses; they were, simply, necklaces of bone or tortoiseshell, earrings of a similar description. The only covering was the small mat round the loins. Looking at the men in a body, generally, they bore a strong resemblance to the North American Indian, only for their darker colour. The Horraforas, also, whilst engaged in war, or during festivals or rejoicings, paint their faces and bodies in a most frightful manner in alternate streaks and circles, with red ochre and white chalk mixed up with grease.

The women are by no means ordinary: there are certainly some that might be well termed ugly, but there are many instances amongst them of really handsome features and forms. The fine matting worn by them, as a short petticoat, is usually ornamented with the rich feathers of the red lorie and other birds. The matting of peculiarly fine texture, worn as a mantle over their shoulders, and enveloping their person, is also similarly decorated; but in domestic or ordinary avocations this is cast aside; and it is only where you can see them gossiping, in

groups together, that this really beautiful mantle is worn.

The women are industrious, whilst the men lounge about in idleness, or are engaged in fishing or acting as scouts. They are not a virtuous people, and little attention seems to be paid to the indiscretions or breach of faith of either sex. The children are stout and healthy, and amuse themselves at all sorts of athletic exercises, under the houses and amongst the trees. Their parents are fond of them, and indulge them to a great extent, for the noise and uproar of these juvenile savages at play is awful. The musical instruments I had an opportunity of inspecting consisted of a kind of drum, formed out of a hollow piece of wood, about two feet in circumference; the heads of it were made of the dressed skin of the wild cat; it gave a dull sound, but one that you could hear at a considerable distance.

There were two "gongs," also, which had been obtained from a Chinese junk that entered the river; the largest of these was suspended from a branch of the tree in which the chief, Terence Connel, resided, close to his door. The sound of this was like thunder, and quite sufficient at any time, day or night, to alarm the tribe, or call them to him to issue some vital instructions. This large instrument was seldom

sounded; but when it was, the tribe considered it to be the prelude to the issuing of some important mandate from their sagacious chief.

The generality of the Horraforas villages are very filthy, the inhabitants allowing all offal, bones, &c., to lie on the ground, and decompose under their houses; but this my friend Connel would not permit, very properly, for the purity of the atmosphere and health of his people. There was a strict rule in his tribe, that every one should make a fire on the ground, and burn off all fish and animal bones, &c., once in every eight days. Well, so much for the inhabitants, now for ourselves. Our perambulations led us towards the northern end of this extensive town, and nearly clear of the trees in which the natives built their houses.

In an open space on the brink of the hill, a number of painted warriors were grouped together in earnest conversation. As soon as they perceived our approach, they gave a screaming yell of triumph to welcome their chief. We entered the circle and saw the dead body of a warrior, with four arrows through him, lying on the ground, attached lengthways to a pole, by which means he was conveyed thither. His paint was different from Connel's tribe; it was all

white; he was a man of gigantic proportions, and fine features.

A rapid conversation ensued between Connel and the rest; after which our friend said, "Come along gintlemen, this is no place for the like of yees; troth, it's well I fell in with you; that dead thief you see there, is one of our inimies' scouts: the boys pinned him within twenty yards of the spot I saw you first. Sure it's one comfort any how to have such a set of chaps about one."

"Are they going to bury him now?" said Trainer.

"Faith, an they soon will, my jewel, in their infernal stomachs."

"Can't you order them to stop such cannibalism?" said Trainer, feelingly.

"I know too much of the Horraforas to do any such thing," said Connel. "They would not have me for chief if I'd interfere now."

We said no more about it to our friend, for we distinctly saw he could not interfere between the Horraforas and his victim, without endangering his own dignity as chief. We jogged on for a little, when Connel abruptly stopped, and said, "Sure it's no harm what they do to the body, when the life is out of it." I turned round once, saw the fire lighting, and smoke curling up from it, preparatory to

cooking the deceased! After a moment or two, we proceeded on at a rapid pace away from the vicinity of such barbarism.

On inquiry, it appeared the lifeless victim was crouching near the ambush of our friends, when a boy, not more than sixteen years of age, saw his white paint and sent an arrow through his chest; a comrade of our young scout was close to, and finished the business; four of them then lashed the body to a pole, and so brought him to where we saw him.

Trainer and I were consulting about the prudence of continuing our march in the direction of the river, where our vessels lay at anchor, when Connel interfered, and told us it would not be safe to venture clear of the line of scouts this day, as he got intelligence from the different posts, that parties of the enemy were hovering about in hopes of catching us as we left his tribe.

To seal the truth of his assertion, he conducted us some distance, to an elevated piece of ground, on which grew a few tall trees; one of them was fitted with a notched pole to ascend by, and a few branches cut off to lay open the view. This was the look-out post of the town; and on ascending to its top, where

a natural arrangement of the branches made a comfortable seat, we enjoyed an extensive view of the surrounding country for miles. Connel directed our attention to the opposite side of the river, and there the whole of the enemies' tribe was encamped, in a line of about a mile long, with fires lighted here and there in the rear of it, in a straight line from Connel's town; they were not more than two miles and a half distant; and although the river intervened, it would be no obstacle to the advance of these savages, as the bamboo and flag-rafts could be prepared in a few minutes, and soon bring them all over. Connel was favoured on his side of the river, and, indeed, for nearly two miles round his town, with a good forest and thicket cover. On the opposite side, where the enemy were, the country was mostly meadow, and they could scarcely move without being seen, either from the look-out tree or by the scouts.

"Well, gintlemen, am I right?" said Connel.

"Yes, you are," said Trainer; "and I'm obliged to you for your friendly advice; but I must say, I think we are in the centre of a jolly good mess; can't we go round by land, and avoid them?"

"Troth, sir, ye can't, for there's plenty of them all round."

"And how are we to get away from this?" said Trainer.

"Why, sir, to get to your ship in safety, you must wait till I tell you when," said Connel. "It's after yees they are now; they think it would be mortial good luck to git hould of yees with them guns; and faith, to tell ye my mind intirely, I think wee'l have a bit of a scrimmage with them yet, on yeer account. I suppose they think they might surprise us, and carry yees all off in the row; but they must rise early in the mornin, that will catch Terry Connel's scouts asleep."

"This is certainly pleasant intelligence!" said Trainer. "Connel, as soon as we can move down let us know, I shall go by your advice."

"Captain, never fear me, I'll see yees all safely aboard myself; but ye see we must wait; in the mean time I'll treat yees all as well as I can, and get up some divarshion to pass the time. I'll set the boys and girls all to feasting and dancin in the evenin, then yee'l see fun."

The chief part of the day we amused ourselves by examining more minutely this Horrafora town, and the woods about it; shooting wild cats and birds, taking care to keep within our lines. Connel showed to us a portion of the liquid poison, in which they

dipped their arrows, making the slightest wound of them surely fatal. It was quite green, not unlike the expressed juice of our garden rue, and emitting a smell exactly similar.

He said it was the juice of a small berry like the slow, that grew on a shrub. I was anxious to see this shrub growing, but could not at the time, as it grew in the distant mountains. He also said, it was all the surer, and its effects more certain, when it had undergone fermentation in the sun. The points of the arrows were dipped in it, then dried off in the sun; and the coating of this deadly poison, when dried on the arrows, gave them a shining appearance as if they had been dipped in a greenish varnish. Sometimes they could not get it, then the arrows were of course used without it; but when they were not surrounded by an enemy, they could obtain as much of it as they required.

Connel, previous to our starting, had issued his orders for the feast and dance, and in the afternoon, on our return from the adjoining forest, we found, not covers laid for so many, but piles of roast hogs, bread fruit, yam, plantain, &c., arranged in tiers, sufficient to supply a thousand people for one meal. After surveying this immense preparation in wonder, Connel exclaimed, "Ye see, captain, jewel, my

people are going to feast in honour of your arrival amongst us, and pay all the respect they can to the friends of their chief."

About 4 P. M. the business of the evening commenced, by Connel ascending to his door and striking a large gong with energy, which had an immediate effect on the population around, as they came down from their houses in all haste, and moved rapidly towards where we were, in hundreds; white sticks were stuck in the ground, at a certain distance, to indicate to the natives their distance to keep, both from the substance of the feast and us; consequently we were free from the annoyance of being crowded up by the savages.

The dense mass of barbarians now before us presented an extraordinary spectacle; the men were all fully decorated with the white chalk and red ochre paint; even their beards were powdered with white chalk; all the other ornaments in their ears, and round their necks, were not forgotten; the men were all ranged in groups on one side, whilst the women were similarly situated on the other; the children were all around this extraordinary assembly, engaged in the full enjoyment of noise and mirth.

Connel pulled one of the roast hogs down off the pile, and placed it before our party, who were all

together, on a large slab of bark; bread fruit, &c., followed; this was, it seemed, the signal for the whole body of the natives before us to begin their part of the feast; hog after hog was rapidly pulled away, and distributed amongst the groups of warriors, the bread fruit, yam, &c., followed, and one would have imagined they had not eaten a bit for days.

The rapidity with which every thing disappeared forced broken ejaculations from our four sailors, such as, "My eyes, Jem, only look there, what slaughter amongst them roast hogs!" "I say, Bill, if them ere painted savages don't knock off soon, they won't be able to move," &c. Well, after a little, the warriors did give in, and the women were then served to their mirthful satisfaction, and all I will say, is, that they also complimented the repast before them by doing it ample justice.

In an incredibly short time, the whole pile of roast hogs and vegetables was cleared away; our party were more tedious, but this may be attributed to the continued and frequent long fits of laughter, that the scene before us excited.. All being over, a song from the whole assembly followed, and though dull and monotonous, was savage in the extreme,

and corresponded well with the wildness of the Horrafora.

The dance soon followed: the warriors all formed in divisions, not unlike several companies of soldiers in line, one after another, and advanced and retired, all the time threatening the enemy with their spears, and working themselves up to a pitch of furious ferocity, screaming and yelling fearfully; the drums were also sending forth their dull sounds in rapid time.

The warriors having acquitted themselves in the dance to their own, the chief's, and our satisfaction, they all broke up and lay down in groups scattered about. Then our friend Connel ascended his notched pole, gave his gong another loud bang, and up started the women and girls, every one of whom cast aside their ornamented mantles, and came prominently forward to the dance, in a state of almost complete nudity; they joined hands in circles of about a dozen each, the drums sounded, they chorussed loudly and wildly, and jumped round in the dance. At first their movements were interesting to look at, but afterwards, towards the close of the dance, became indecorous, and vile in the extreme, so that I shall say no more about it.

CHAPTER XIV.

A TROPICAL LIGHTNING AND THUNDER STORM. — BAD NEWS. — OUR MISGIVINGS. — STROLL THROUGH THE TOWN. — STRANGE SCENES. — CAPTAIN TRAINER ENJOYS THE FUN. — CONNEL'S CAPTURE OF ONE OF THE ENEMIES' CHIEFS. — HE EXTORTS INFORMATION FROM THE WOUNDED SAVAGE. — A WILD SCENE. — MARRIAGE CEREMONY IN CONNEL'S TRIBE. — COURTSHIP AMONGST THE HORRAFORAS. — VARIOUS LANGUAGES OF DIFFERENT TRIBES. — CONNEL'S VISIT TO US THE NIGHT BEFORE THE BATTLE.

In the evening the clouds gathered over us in great density; the lightning began to flicker before our eyes; loud thunder crashed over our heads; and after sundown the rain descended heavily, in true tropical style, not coming down in drops, but as if it were poured upon us; however, the houses were proof against the heaviest of it, and we were comfortably dry in Connel's house; he assured us, also, we were perfectly safe from any uproar from the enemy at present, as the Horraforas would not move whilst they saw lightning, or heard thunder. Well, we enjoyed another night's sleep, but full of queer

dreams, produced, I suppose, by the impression of the wild exhibition we had witnessed the evening before.

At an early hour the following morning, Connel ascended to our dormitory: the first question from us was, of course, as to the news from the out-posts, or line of scouts; he answered, gloomily enough, that he had lost two of his men last night, but that his had killed and brought home four of "the other brown thieves," — that the bodies were deposited close to us, and that the enemy was around them in considerable numbers. "So ye see, gintlemen, yee may as well take another snooze, for the divil an inch yees could move clear of our lines, without bein in their murtherin grips; faix, they have a lovin fancy to get hoult of yees any how." After giving us so much information, he descended the ladder, saying he would soon return.

"I wonder," said Trainer, "when we shall get away, or how this excursion will end? for it is beyond doubt we're in a fix." I perfectly agreed with him, at the same time endeavouring to hammer some philosophy into his mind, by such expressions as "never fear, it's a long path has no turn; I feel confident in Connel's sincerity to us, and in his sagacity in devising means for our escape as soon as he can with

safety." "I hope," said my friend, "Stewart will not have the imprudence to send out more men in search of us, as that would only make bad worse, for, according to Connel's report, he his very fairly surrounded."

We thus indulged in conversation respecting the dilemma we placed ourselves in, until Connel's return; he was provided, as before, with food sufficient for a dozen men to breakfast on; having descended by the ladder to the foot of the tree, we seated ourselves, and took our mentor's advice, of eating heartily. "Well, Connel," said Trainer, "any more news from the scouts." "Troth, no sir, only them thieves have moved off a little, but there's no depindin on them sure, for they might be back in a jiffy, so ye see, sir, all you can do to-day is to amuse yerselves about the town, and within our lines, remimbir that, sir; and sure it's myself, and some of the boys (meaning the savages) that 'ill bring yees all safe to the ship again, in spite of these devils scoutin about our lines."

We, of course, thanked him, and said we should do exactly as he told us; then he told us he had to leave us to look round the lines, and to "divart ourselves" as well as we could until his return. We wandered about from tree to tree, and group to

group of the savages, as they were seated here and there in parties engaged in mirthful conversation, or singing and drum beating, all of whom received us in the most polite manner possible according to their custom, which was to sign to us to sit down, partake of some plantain, &c., and, whilst thus engaged, to join hands or spears, and keep dancing, or rather jumping wildly round and round us, until such times as we thought fit to stand up; then they finished off with loud clapping of hands and a yell.

"Pleasant life this!" said Trainer. "Very," said I, so we walked on further, and fell in with many groups of boys practising the use of the bow and arrow, under the tuition of a warrior of advanced age; they all seemed to take such interest in the sport, that they heeded us little; these young imps, whilst under tuition, were allowed the privilege of wearing the paint of the tribe, and they had it on, and well arranged too it was. We watched their proceedings for a considerable time, and can state that a Horrafora's school is unlike that of an English one; there is no "birch" in requisition.

The delinquent, or careless one, is made to stand off clear of the rest, on an elevated stone or piece of wood, with his paint rubbed off; and the whole school of this venerable savage preceptor are at per-

fect liberty to break off when they get tired of their sport, and sing, dance, and yell, round the elevated youth as long as they please, to his great annoyance, and temporary disgrace. We witnessed a proceeding of this kind in another direction, which highly amused us; whatever expressions the boys, who danced round "fool in the middle," alias, the disgraced youth, used, he became so impatient in his position, then annoyed, and lastly, so enraged, that he jumped down off the stone, capsized two of his tormentors, and, as one of our hunters would express it, "stole away," and that at a round pace too, pursued closely by the rest, away out of sight through the trees. As for my friend Trainer, he seemed to forget that he was in a Horrafora town, in a "fix," as he termed it, and enjoyed this boyish affair as much as if he were standing safely on the deck of his own vessel.

It was, of course, well known to every inhabitant of the town, that the enemy was hovering about them, yet there was no indication of fear in either old or young, man, woman, or child, all seemed to indulge in their usual pastimes and amusements; and as an instance of their indifference to fear or danger, there were six or eight couples to go together, "for better or for worse," on that day, but the affair could not go on or be ended without the presence of their

chief, and they alone showed any anxiety or impatience.

It was afternoon before Connel made his appearance in the town. He was accompanied by four of his tribe, three of whom were bearing a wounded savage belonging to the enemy. He would have been killed at once only for Connel's interference, who told him he would save his life provided he gave true information as to the intended movements of his tribe; that if he were found to deceive or tell lies, he would be cut up and thrown to the dogs. Connel seemed highly pleased with his capture. "The sculking thief was a chief: he knew it at once by his ornaments and paint."

The wounded man was brought and placed sitting with his back against the tree that supported the chief's house. Connel now stood before the wounded chief, Trainer and I were close to him, and a number of the minor chiefs stood around us, glaring with grim ferocity on the wounded man, whose white paint contrasted curiously with the red and yellow of ours. Connel turned to us and said, "Bad luck to this fellow. His talk is somewhat different from my tribe, but by gapers I'll have the truth out of him some way or another."

With that he took his small axe, which he called

his "skull smasher," out of his belt, laid it down beside him, and commenced his interrogatories in the wildest language I ever heard, by significantly pointing to the axe. The answers the wounded chief gave to Connel's questions were slow, but apparently impressive. I observed, almost immediately, the difference of time in the words spoken by the stranger before us and Connel's tribe, making every allowance for the weakness of the man. Trainer whispered to me, "I say, doctor, I rather think you would find it a job to take notes of this talk." "Hush!" said I, "let us watch them."

At this stage of the proceedings, the wounded man, after speaking for some time, pointed to us, and then in particular directions of the country. Connel now turned round to us to say, "I was right, gintlimen, it's after yees they are, and the murtherin dogs expect to be at our cover by daylight to-morrow mornin to attack this place; but, if the fellow tells truth, there's not so many of them comin, and I expect to give them the father of a good lickin. Any how we owe it to them, for some time agone this same tribe killed two of our best men by treachery; but any how, honies, it's all for the best, for I'm sure to beat them, and clear the road for yees to go down again to your ship. You may depind on

it, the divil a hair of yer heads 'ill be tiched as long as Terry Connel has a man to cover yees; and captain, jewel, sure if you or any of yer min sees a few of our people hard sit upon, you'll not refuse us a stray shot?"

Trainer assured Connel, as our chance visit to him was the cause of inducing the other tribe to attack his people and his town, we were bound to assist him, as well for our sakes as for his, and would do so to a man. Connel instantly grasped him warmly with both hands, and exclaimed, "Och thin, captain, yees all 'ill see as purty a scrimmage as ever ye looked at, for the Horraforas are the divils for skull splitting whin they're druv to it!" The wounded man was carried away to a house to be taken care of, and guarded by a few warriors: the assemblage of chiefs (after a few words from Connel) had broken up, and all was quiet again.

Connel, Trainer and I, with the four seamen (we deemed it prudent to get and keep together for the future), were all feasting ourselves under the shade of the house, laughing away as merrily as if we were all safe in old England. We were arranging matters for the anticipated "row," as Connel called it, when two young men advanced timidly and said something to our host, who gave a "phew!" and laughed im-

moderately. He said two or three words to the young men, and they darted off like an arrow from a bow. Then addressing us, "The Horraforas are the divil, out and out entirely; bad luck to me if there's not six couple of thim lovin people going to git married this blessed day. Well, the more the merrier, says Terry Connel; the chaps 'ill fight all the betther for it in the mornin knowin they have wives at home."

We all expressed our delight at this occurrence, as we should have a chance of witnessing the interesting ceremony. "Och, as for that, it's short and sweete; it's by my ordhers only, and all I say is, whin I git them all in twos, (I never marries less than two couple at a time,) away with yees all, be lovin, and live together." Trainer expressed his admiration of the brevity of the proceeding, and jocularly observed, that when he intended to "get spliced" he should trouble Connel.

The peculiarity of the courtship amongst the various tribes of the Horraforas deserves special notice, and, according to Connel's account (though he visited many of them), there was no difference on this point. After the young man had presented the skull of an enemy, procured, as I have before stated, at great personal risk, he became the accepted suitor;

but, as it were, the beauty of the affair, consisted in the young man sending a leaf off one of the trees they build their houses in, with a small cord, made of his own long hair, attached to the stem of the leaf, to the young woman. She obtains one of a similar size, places them together, and makes both fast with a cord of hair, and sends it back to the young man. This very innocent transaction is, on the girl's part, as much as to say, "I've not changed my mind, the affair is settled." On their appearance before the chief this, as it were, nuptial tie and agreement, is held up to him, when he summarily ends the ceremony as I have before stated in Connel's words.

In due time the six couple made their appearance. The young women dressed in their ornamented matting cloak, the young men in full war paint, and all their ornaments on. They ranged themselves in twos, at about six feet apart; and after we had enjoyed a long gaze at them, Connel in about two minutes finished the affair, and away they went each couple to their house in the trees. We passed the remainder of the day in cleaning our guns and getting them in perfect working order, all the time obtaining as much information as we could collect from Connel, respecting this extraordinary race of people; and with the exception of what we observed

ourselves in his tribe, there was little difference as to their customs. The chief one was, the various languages amongst them, some tribes not understanding the others; and some that did not paint their bodies, but these were very few. The arms of all were equal, spears, bows, some poisoned arrows, and a few clubs.

The night was very fine and favoured our side greatly, as the scouts were doubled and the number of men outlying was considerable; if it had rained heavily they, of course, would suffer fatigue and be less fitted for the morning's work we had in anticipation. After Connel had arranged some of his war business with the chiefs of the tribe he paid us a visit, and during a long conversation detailed to us the various wars that existed amongst different tribes within at least one hundred miles of him, his friendship with some, his enmity with others.

The tribe he expected to give battle to in the morning were always the enemies of his people, and for a long time they had suffered a series of annoyances from them, but he and every man of his tribe were determined to put forth all their disposable force and energy, and give them a lasting punishment in the morning. The confession of the wounded chief was correct, for the scouts had

already reported they had advanced their lines to the opposite bank of the river.

"So, gintlimen, ye see how it is, and likely enough this is the last night yee'll have to stop in this Horrafora town, or under the roof of Terry Connel. Don't think ye brought this row on me, or the people here. Ye didn't. We have an ould score betwune us, and the sooner it's sittled the betther. I'm sure to bate thim, but it's no use in jabberin aforehand; yee'll see what stuff the boys of this tribe are made of. Well, afther we lick thim, wee'll not return here, but push on to their town, which lies about twinty miles from this, and the same distance from your ship. Their cursed town is sure to be pillaged and fired; thin the chief part of my people will return home, while myself and a parcel of the boys 'ill put ye all safe aboard again."

He stated also that he had no other way for our safety than for us to accompany the tribe, after the battle, on to the other Horrafora town, as the marauding scouts of the enemy were too numerous, and too treacherous, for our safety. He then drew from under his mat-cloak two small bags, made out of the skin of the wild cat, and feelingly, I may fairly add, with deep emotion, told us, that he had a trifling present for each of us, which, before he displayed, he

said we must accept in token of his friendship for us, and the visit we paid him in his wilderness.

He then opened the bags, and placed before our eyes a large quantity of seed pearl, and amongst them some large valuable ones. Trainer at once said he would not receive so valuable a gift without giving him an equivalent, and added, "Connel, bring them on board, and we'll trade for them in anything you wish, that I can spare." "There's one bag here for each of ye," said Connel; "will ye stick thim inside yer jackets till the schrimmage is over, and we'll then talk about thim?" We agreed to that, and he seemed quite satisfied. "Gintlimen, I must now go round the town and see if the boys are ready for mornin; do ye both lye down and sleep as well as ye can till I call ye: good night." With that this strange being descended the ladder, and disappeared amongst the gloom of the trees.

CHAPTER XV.

THE ALARM GONG.—CONNEL'S WARRIORS IN REVIEW.—THEIR FEROCIOUS APPEARANCE.—WE JOIN THEM AS ALLIES.—OUR VOCIFEROUS RECEPTION.—CONNEL'S ORDER OF MARCH.—THE SAVAGES "GO A-HEAD."—UNEXPECTED FORCE OF THE ENEMY.—CONNEL'S GENERALSHIP.—ADVANCE OF THE ENEMY.—CONNEL HEADS A SAVAGE CHARGE.—THE BATTLE. AN ACCOUNT OF IT FROM BEGINNING TO ENDING.—HORRID CONSUMMATION OF SAVAGE WARFARE.—TRAINER AND I WALK OVER THE BATTLE GROUND.—CONNEL MUSTERS FRESH MEN.—WE ALL START OFF FOR THE ENEMIES' TOWN.

AT about 4 A.M., Connel again ascended to our sleeping apartment, and told us he was going to strike the "gong" for a general muster. He did so, and it was so close to (hanging beside the door) that it sounded like thunder in our ears. We rubbed our eyes for awhile, soon awoke to the reality of the scene to be enacted. He then pointed to a part of the room where he had already placed a substantial morning meal. "Eate harty, gintlimen, it may be sunset agin before ye can get anything of the kind.

When yee'r satisfied follow me to the other ind of the town to the clearin, where the warriors are mustherin now. We'll soon march, as the sodgers say, and, be me sowl, yee'll see fun."

We did as he desired, joined the four seamen who were waiting for us close to, and our little band marched off to the place of rendezvous. Trainer took the precaution of making the men bring the bayonets belonging to their guns with them: so they were fixed, and we entered the square of painted warriors in very regular and respectable style, and marched up to the position where Connel (their chief) stood, greeted by the yells of the gratified savages.

It was not yet daylight, but the innumerable torches that flamed about rendered every object around perfectly distinct. We "ground arms," and gazed on the scene before us in wonder and amazement. Trainer's mouth, as well as his eyes, was wide open, as he scanned the line of savages. The ferocity of their countenances, and their hideously painted bodies, conveyed to me the idea that we were in some hellish region surrounded by demons.

"Well, Captain," said Connel, "what do ye think of my min?"

"They have a horrid look," said Trainer.

"So they have, my jewel; but if ye saw the paint

as often as I did, ye'd be used to it, and not think so."

"How many do you muster, Connel," said Trainer.

"Eight hundred and fifty as clane fellows as ever put an arrow to a bow-string; they'l do what I ordher them, Captain, and not a man in them lines 'ill flinch an inch, until I tell them to move; I know it, I've tried them well afore now, I can tell ye."

This savage array of men formed into three divisions, Connel and our small party with the centre, two chiefs, of war reputation, heading the right and left: daylight was now beginning to appear, as we advanced down the slope of hill into the meadowy plain below, which was fully a mile in breadth. Before we entered the dark woods, the perfect regularity with which the savages kept together astonished both Trainer and me: no stragglers, not a man out of his place. The forests were entered, and we occasionally fell in with some of our scouts, who instantly joined the rest, and informed us that the enemy had nearly all crossed the river.

We had fully two miles and a half of dense forest and jungle to pass through, to bring us, I may say, into daylight again. The march, so far, was a rapid one; and the panting or hard breathing of the barbarians, as they pushed forward with eagerness, was

perfectly audible on all sides; yet onward drove this savage horde, until we arrived at the outer edge of the wood, and our last line of scouts, who also joined their respective divisions, as their services for the present were otherwise required.

Whether it was the impressiveness of the scene, or the peculiarity of our situation, that had acted on our imagination I know not: but the sun rose in magnified size, blood-red, and as he passed over the eastern mountains cast a ruddy glare over everything. The space between the wood, where we now made a halt under cover, to the bank of the river, was about one mile: it was all soft meadow land, without a tree, except one dense patch of bushes near the river-bank, which, in the eastern portion of our position, sent an arm of its leafy canopy up to the wood where we halted.

As we were somewhat elevated above the plain before us, we could plainly see that the white-painted enemy had all crossed the river, without leaving a man behind, and were fearlessly advancing across the plain towards the wood where we were posted. It was also plain to us all that they far outnumbered our force, as there could not be less than a thousand of them, which Connel accounted for by saying, "The murtherin canibals had got some help from

another tribe: but no matther, wee'l give it to them, Captain; do you, and you all, keep close to me; I'll tell yee all what to do; and if yee'l do it, yee'l sarve yerselves and me, for we must be in arnest now, without any compunction at all, at all."

Connel now dispatched a hundred men along, under cover of the arm of the thicket, to the mangrove bushes on the banks of the river, and consequently in the rear of the advancing horde; they had orders to keep close until further orders. A few of the enemy's scouts were now thrown forward towards our position, to feel the way for the main body. There were about a dozen of them, all covered with paint, laid on in various patterns; they came on running, and did not stop until they entered the edge of the wood, and fell pierced with arrows. As they had entered the cover, their fate was not seen by the main body; and another division of scouts was sent after them; but as we had advanced further out, to free ourselves from the thicket, these, as soon as they came near, made a dead halt upon seeing us; they were about to retreat back into the plain again, but they had advanced too far, and they also met their doom.

The main body, on perceiving the fate of their scouts, came on at a rush. Connel, on seeing this,

brought his whole force, posted at the wood, to the verge of the cover, so that every man could use his bow and arrow. As soon as the enemy came to within about four hundred yards of us, they thought proper to halt, and the king, or head chief, advanced clear of his tribe to yell and tantalise us from the cover. "By and by, my honey," said Connel musing, "wee'l be with you." The chief was a giant of a man, hair and beard powdered with chalk, face painted black, and body white all over. This horrible-looking chief Connel told us was an infernal being in human form, and of the most murdering and cannibalistic propensity. "It ud save us a mortial dale of trouble, ay, and many fine min too, if he was dispatched at once. Gintlemen, we have odds to fight aginst to-day, and if yee'd only shoot that cursed murderer, it ud be half the battle. Captain, jewel, now's yeer time to sarve us: who is the best shot in yeer party?"

Trainer referred Connel to my gun; I told my friend he might as well try the shot, for I had really no wish to pull a trigger against any of them if I could at all avoid it. It was my intention to allow the affair to pass over without such an act, except in case of actual self-defence. Trainer told me at once our lives were now at stake, and to "go on." Con-

nel said, "Gintlemen, it's no time to be talking now; if you let that fellow inside his lines agin, wee'l have hard work of it: will ye fire?"

Being thus urged by Connel, one of our party rested his gun on the lower branch of a tree, took deliberate aim, and fired! There being no wind to blow off the smoke we had to duck under it to observe the effects of the shot. This huge and (by all accounts) formidable leader of our opponents ceased yelling and jumping. His hitherto upraised arms had fallen powerless by his side, and he stood fixed and upright like a daubed statue. He was about receiving another shot, when he fell heavily forward and lay motionless."

"That's an act of marcy," said Connel. "Ay, and a blessin to the whole counthry for a hundred miles round; there could be no pace as long as that divil lived." Great numbers of white-painted warriors ran out in advance to where their fallen chief lay. This movement brought them within range of even the ship's short muskets the seamen had. "Now, gintlimen, the're not near enough yet for our arrows to work with dead sartanty, but do yees all blaze away and thin their numbers, and Terry Connel's blessin on ye."

Trainer told the eager seamen now to "go on,"

but fire singly, lest they might lose a useless shot at the same mark. So we all set to work in real earnest, to the no small admiration of the warriors, who were watching the effect of the assistance we were rendering them, but, indeed, as much for our own safety as theirs. Each shot from our party told; the aim was steady; our stock of ammunition being limited we acted deliberately. It appeared to be perfect gratification to our four seamen to be "popping off the cannibals," as they termed nearly all savages.

The entire mass of the enemy before us now advanced, so as to bring their dead chief and the rest that had fallen by our shot within their lines, gave loud defying yells and threatening gestures. Our firing continued, and now with increased effect, as they were all in a dense body. Connel ordered two or three arrows to be discharged to try the distance, and found it to suit his purposes. He had disappeared for a few minutes, and on his return appeared an altered man. It seemed he was in the habit of carrying his paint with him, but never laid it on until a moment of vital importance arrived. He was now about to head his warriors in person against the enemy in the plain before us, and had painted his face red and chest yellow with ochre. In

one hand he held a small axe, with a three feet handle in it; in the other, a long stout spear, which he said was as good as any "Irish pike" any "dacent man" ever handled.

Connel told us to take up a new position, a little further to the right, on the top of a high mound, which was partly covered with bushes, and to "pepper away until he closed with his opponents, then resarve our fire, except only at a 'White Paint.' Mind the white gintlimen, and sure there'll be no mistakes. Yee'll all have a fine view of the fun off that mound, and yee'll see as purty a faction fight as iver was in the auld counthry. Hurra for ould Ireland and my tribe of Horraforas!"

With that this strange, daring man, first sent a messenger round to tell the party in ambush near the river to come on in the rear of the enemy, and cooperate in the attack; then placed himself at the head of about four hundred men, when a fearful yell burst from the entire of his tribe. We also became almost madly excited by the scene before us, and continued to load and fire as fast as we could, accompanying almost every shot or volley with a "Hurra!" nearly as wild as the savage yell.

Wherever our balls entered the great assemblage

of the enemy before us they, of course, had occasionally double effect, and created temporary confusion where the "White Paints" fell. It was dead calm, not a breath of wind to flutter a leaf, and as our firing had been rapid for a few minutes, we had to stop, to allow the smoke to curl up from about us and off the mound, in order distinctly to see our mark.

But we were prevented from the continuance of our operations by a loud yell from the whole of our tribe, both in front and rear of the enemy, and their ferocious charge to close with, and engage them in hand-to-hand combat. Indeed, from a former hint of Connel's, it appeared to be his chief tactics, as he said, "He didn't see any use in lookin at a parcel of chaps standin and shooting poisoned arrows at each other."

The grass in the plain was parched up and all but in powder, from its exposure to the great heat of the sun's rays; and, as the two tribes rushed on each other in fearful strife, the clouds of dust that were thrown up rendered a great part of the struggle indistinct. Occasionally a "White Paint" would jump out and offer a fair mark for us from the mound. Sometimes you would perceive heads, sometimes legs and arms, clear of the dust in rapid motion. The crashing of

the clubs on the heads of the savages, yells, screams, hideous groans, all were occasionally audible, and enough to make one's flesh creep.

As the "thick of the fight" would alter its position, dozens of men might be perceived lying on the earth either dead or dying. They fought on for nearly two hours with change after change of position, until the whole were nearly at the foot of the mound on which we were posted, and the whole barbarian scene was displayed fully before our eyes and close to us. Here again we had an opportunity of rendering those a service who were hard pressed by numbers. Our seamen were eager to run down the mound for the purpose of enjoying a bayoneting match amongst them; but Trainer would not permit such folly, and told them to amuse themselves firing at them from where we were, which they did with great perseverance.

At last the "White Paints" began to jump clear of the fight in odd ones, then in twos and threes, then half a dozen at a time, when our ears were greeted by a victorious yell from our tribe; and the remnant of the enemy that had not fallen was in rapid flight, closely pursued by a large body of ours. The slaughter amongst these savages was great, and they were not satisfied with what they had killed, but several demon

warriors ran round the battle ground, dispatching every unfortunate that was only wounded.

Connel now merged from the throng of warriors living, dead, and dying. His axe rested in the hollow of his arm, and he staggered up towards where we were, evidently greatly fatigued. The red paint was half rubbed off his face, and the yellow off his chest, in his personal struggles with the enemy. His axe, blade and handle, his hands, arms, and body, were splashed over with blood. This frightful appearance, together with the wild ferocity of his eye, was enough to sicken one to look at: it stamped him, as it were, a human butcher.

"Well, gintlemen," said Connel as he seated himself beside us on the mound, "how did yees all like that tussel with thim white-painted thieves? They fought like the divil, and died hard."

"Connel," earnestly and humanely spoke Trainer, "can't you stop your people from murdering those wounded men about the field. The screams of them are horrible to listen to."

"Troth, and that's more than I can do," said Connel, "though I'm their chief. At another time they'd do as I'd tell them; but, ye see, they're mad now: they'l listen to nothin but kill, kill. Arrah, Captain dear, ye don't know the Horraforas: ye

might jist as well think to turn a gale of wind the other way with a blast of a bellows as to make thim same fellows of mine stop now as long as they see a live man on the ground. This is the last day of the 'White Paints.' Thim boys of mine 'ill follow them up till there's not a man in the tribe left, an it's a blessin for the pace of the country. With your lave, I'll take a drink of wather, lie down, and rest myself, for I'm tired."

I began unconsciously to whistle "Rest, warrior, rest," as I gazed on the now prostrate form of our friend Connel, and was only disturbed in my reverie by Trainer observing to me that, when he first saw the multitude of "White Paints" that so formidably advanced upon our position, he had his misgivings as to the result of the battle and the safety of our party; but now he felt a load off him, particularly as we could go down again in safety to our vessel.

"So," said he, "come down now upon the plain, and let's take a turn over the battle ground and see all." We did so, leaving our friend Connel to rest himself on the mound. The hawks and a kind of vulture were hovering over and alighting here and there on the field in hundreds. In some parts of the ground, where the fight raged most violently and the struggle was greatest, there was not a blade of grass:

all was a bed of dust. The necklaces and ear ornaments had been already torn off the dead as trophies to bring back, and nothing on them but the paint: broken spears, arrows, and clubs were scattered about in all directions.

A great number of warriors were assisting our wounded men off the field up to the wood, where the shade of the trees would protect them from the burning heat of the sun's rays. Others were bringing calabashes full of water from the river for the wounded to drink; and all these grim-looking warriors seemed to betray the most anxious solicitude for their wounded brethren.

The appearances of the dead and their wounds would be too horrifying a subject to dwell on, so I shall say nothing further about it. Connel's tribe lost sixty-four men killed, and thirty-four badly wounded. The "White Paints," though the tribe mustered about one thousand when they entered the field, became almost extinct before sun-down, as they were closely pursued, and butchered almost to a man. By the time we had returned from our excursion through this field of blood to the mound, Connel was sufficiently rested to sit up and wash himself.

"Well, gintlemen, ye were taking a stroll over the

ground: how did yees like our doins? there's plenty of them 'White Paints,' any how." Trainer said it was as b——y a looking sight as ever he saw.

"So it may be, my jewel; but it's a great day for our tribe, ay, and for the counthry too, for there'l be pace for many a long day all over this ind of the island. It was that big canibal that was first shot that kept every tribe hereabouts on their guard, and the whole counthry in an uproar."

He then explained to us that he intended to muster about one hundred men, and push on for the enemy's town. Though we were so near his own he said he would not go back now to it; that from the cannibalistic scenes that would be there enacted, it was no place for us. "Looke there, to the left of you, Captain; don't ye see thim heathens of mine, slinging the dead on poles, and carrying them off the field already for the feast!" We did, indeed, observe it: and Trainer, glad to move off from such a scene in any way, told Connel we were all ready to move as soon as he felt himself sufficiently rested to start. Connel said he would instantly go on, as soon as the fresh men, who had charge of the town during the conflict, arrived. While we were away through the field, he sent a messenger for them.

In the afternoon the warriors arrived, fully

equipped for the march, and we all started off, crossed the river on some of the rafts which the "White Paints" used for the same purpose, and continued rapidly on in the route of the enemy's town: indeed it was no difficult matter to trace it, for the broad track of the pursuers and pursued was distinct enough, independently of the occasionally falling in with the dead body of a "White Paint." The country we crossed over was open, but with few trees on it; the grass had a parched appearance; the ground was very irregular; in some places it was undulating and pretty enough, in others broken stony ground, and deep, irregular, rocky ravines.

CHAPTER XVI.

ARRIVE AT THE MOUNTAINS. — BIVOUAC. — PUSH ON. — FALL IN WITH A WOUNDED WARRIOR. — ARRIVE AT THE "WHITE PAINTS'" TOWN. — OUR WARRIORS IN POSSESSION OF IT. — THE WOMEN. — PROCEED ON OUR ROUTE. — ENCAMP AT THE RIVER. — ANOTHER HOG-HUNT. — CANOES ARRIVE. — THEY PADDLE DOWN THE STREAM. — RIVER SCENERY. — A RAPID. — THE VESSELS IN SIGHT. — A JEST. — CAPTAIN STEWART'S AMAZEMENT AT SEEING US. — ON BOARD THE HOUND AGAIN. — CONNEL'S BODY-GUARD OF SAVAGES. — STEWART'S INTRODUCTION TO THE CHIEF. — CONNEL'S NEW COSTUME. — STEWART'S ACCOUNT OF TRANSACTIONS SINCE WE LEFT HIM. — A CABIN SCENE. — NATIVE FISHING. — TRADING WITH CONNEL'S TRIBE. — SPORTING THROUGH THE COUNTRY. — THE VESSELS DROP DOWN THE RIVER. — ANCHOR OFF A WATERING-PLACE. — RELIGION OF THE HORRAFORAS. — FAREWELL TO CONNEL AND HIS SAVAGES.

Our route was a southerly one. At sun-down we arrived at the foot of a range of hills, which should be passed over, but as it was now too late to do so, we encamped for the night on the bank of a large water-hole. On the surface of this pool there were many black wild-duck, so we helped ourselves to a few of them; and not far off us was an extensive

cane-brake, out of which the Horraforas hunted some wild hogs, and we shot a sufficient supply for our entire party that evening. This part of the cruise was particularly agreeable to our small party, for we were well aware there was no further difficulty in our way to our vessels, with the exception of this bye-visit to the town of the now nearly extinct "White Paints."

Night passed over as it usually does at a bivouac in a hot climate, a large fire made; in this instance (Connel's party being so strong) we had several fires. Some were sleeping before them; others talking and laughing; some of our men continually rubbing their eyes, hands, and faces, that were mosquito-bitten, whilst others, with hat or cap in hand, were making useless exertions to knock down the large bats as they flapped amongst us. Shortly after daylight the morning meal was prepared; and as soon as we could distinctly see our way, the whole party was in motion, and, as it were, climbing the mountain, for it was both rugged and steep. In descending the other side, we fell in with one of our tribe, badly wounded in the thigh with a spear: he had his opponent, a dead "White Paint," stretched at his feet.

Connel's followers soon formed a litter out of poles

and flags, on which he was carefully laid, and borne onwards with the rest of the party. The view from the hills was truly rich: magnificent forests dotted by numerous lakes in one direction; in another, rich park-like land, having extensive grass plains, with clumps of large trees scattered over it. At night we had to encamp again, as usual, on the bank of a small river.

The following morning we again commenced our march, and after passing over about eight miles more of a fine plain, arrived by mid-day at the large clustre of spreading trees in which the "White Paints'" town existed. We found it already occupied by about one hundred and fifty warriors of Connel's tribe. There was much wailing with some of the women and children, but the majority of them, to our astonishment, were laughing and merry. On inquiring the cause of all this, we soon discovered that a number of the new-made widows had already accepted many of Connel's young men for husbands; and the sight of another hundred warriors, mostly young, entering their town, was a pleasing prospect to the remainder.

It is a custom amongst the Horraforas, that when a warrior has come from battle, or entered an enemy's town, the preliminaries of the presentation of the

skull and tied leaves (which I have already described) are dispensed with, and the hero has nothing further to do but lead home his wife without loss of time, be she maid or widow.

The "White Paints'" town was rich in supply of tortoiseshell, gold-dust, and pearl: all of which Trainer told Connel, if his people would bring down to where the vessels were, he would trade for fairly. This town had a similar rookery appearance to Connel's: the sleeping apartments built up in the trees, but it was much more filthy, as under each house there was a pile of hay and fish bones, with the rind of bread-fruit and plantain in a state of decomposition, that scented the air so disagreeably that even the seamen with us were glad to hold their noses occasionally until we escaped from it.

Connel added fifty of his party to those who had already possession of the town, and left the two hundred in charge of it, bringing fifty warriors as a body-guard with us. The reason of this precaution, Connel said, was, though the "White Paints," as a tribe, were virtually extinct, yet a few of them had so far escaped, and their scouts might be outlying in our path. We complimented his caution and judgment and trudged on. In consequence of all this hurried marching over an irregular country, the sea-

men, who were not accustomed to a thing of the kind, were greatly broken up and footsore.

At sun-down we again encamped on the banks of the great river in which our vessels lay at anchor, about fifteen miles lower down.

Connel informed us that he sent positive orders to his town to send down to this point or bend of the river a sufficient number of canoes to convey us and the entire of his party down to the anchorage, and he felt annoyed they had not arrived; but he felt sure they would either in the night or morning. "So, gintlemen, yees are all safe here now: yees may enjoy as well as ye can yeer last night ashore in the counthry of the Horraforas." Near daylight there was a great splashing, yelling, and the wild song of the Horraforas coming down the stream. By-and-by we could listen to the occasional stroke of the paddle-blade on the sides of the canoe, keeping time to their song,—something in the same way the natives of the Georgian Islands and New Zealand do. This was the expected fleet of canoes.

Shortly after daylight, as the woods and cane-brakes about were thick and afforded good cover for the hogs, Trainer and I, with Connel and several of the natives, entered this with the dogs, which followed the natives everywhere, and we were engaged

for two hours in our last hog-hunt on this island. We were all very merry, and the natives, from their late success in battle, were particularly animated and wild-looking. A large number of hogs was driven out clear of the thicket and cane-brake, and, in the midst of a tremendous uproar of yelling and screaming, a goodly number of them were either speared by the Horraforas or shot by us. As for my friend Trainer, he was so elated at the idea of soon being safe afloat again, that he not only enjoyed the sport heartily, but he gave quite as many yells as wildly, and made as much noise as any savage of the party.

After the fifty natives of Connel's retinue and our party had eaten a good supply of pork, the rest of the dead hogs were stowed away in the canoes. We embarked, shoved off, and paddled away down the stream, which, at this part of the river, ran rapidly, followed by all the other canoes, in very respectable style. "I wonder," said Trainer, "what Stewart will think when he'll see such a host of canoes approaching him?"

This part of the river was really beautiful. The fringe of mangrove bushes along its sandy banks, with the gigantic trees behind them, sending out their leafy arms far over the river, threw occasionally an agreeable shade over the water. The branches of the trees were filled with lories of various plumage.

The bird of Paradise frequently flew across the river, so low that its magnificent tail almost touched our heads. On a naked limb of a tree, here and there a wild cat might be seen stretched along half asleep.

The stream increased in rapidity, and widened out considerably as we neared the rapid, or descending sheet of water. Here Connel told us to land, and walk some way down until the canoes passed it, as the fall was considerable and we could not possibly remain in them without getting a good drenching. The canoes were all very long, and capable of containing each from twenty to thirty men. However, they all got out, with the exception of four to each, who were to guide it down the fall.

We walked on, or rather ran, to be in time to witness the passage of the canoes through this intricacy. The fall appeared to be about fourteen feet, but the immense body of water that passed slantingly over the ledge of rocks caused it to be quite smooth, and to intermingle with the bed of the river below with scarcely any noise. It was fully one-fourth of a mile across.

The canoes presented a curious, and to us who were watching them from, as it were, the face of the fall, a dangerous aspect. As the bow of the canoe passed on the sloping or falling water, the stern,

with the two men who guided the vessel, was raised high in the air, then with amazing velocity rushed down the shoot, buried its stem in the bed of the river below, and, as it still shot a-head, gradually righted, half filled with water. The canoes were managed with admirable dexterity.

Only one out of the many which accompanied us suffered a capsize, and that arose from the natives in the stern being engaged in immoderate laughter at something or other, instead of attending to their steering; but the only damage done was the outrigger torn off, and the paint partly washed off the bodies of the savages. The canoes were hauled to the bank, and the water baled out; the hot rays of the sun soon dried them up again, and we embarked. After we had passed the rapid, the river was smooth, and the action of the current scarcely perceptible.

In about two hours from passing the fall, the banks and country about was less wooded, and afforded us views not only of distant mountain scenery, but what was much more to our present purpose, the masts' heads of our vessels; which, as soon as Trainer got sight of, he bellowed out "Sail ho!" From the great curve at this part of the river, and the position of our masts, one might imagine the vessels were high and dry, up in the meadow land.

On sweeping round this curve, the river was as straight as a line, and the two vessels boldly in sight. To do the thing in a formidable and respectable style as we advanced to our friends, we formed three canoes abreast, whilst ours lead the van. When within about half a mile of the vessels, "Now, then," said Trainer, "let us take a rise out of Stewart." Connel being up to the sport, ordered his savages to give one of their charging yells. This was done three or four times, and the banks of the river, which were here high, echoed each shout several times.

Trainer told all our party to duck low in the canoes; and he and I took off our caps, so that we could poke our heads above the gunwale to watch proceedings. Another yell from our barbarian companions, and as every thing was clear in view on board the vessels, a great bustle was observed on board Stewart's brig. The crew all hastened towards the stern, and his two cannonades were ran out; we observed one of the crew running aft with a lighted match, when Trainer instantly stood up in the bow of our canoe, exclaiming, "This joke's gone far enough, he's going to fire on us," and waved his cap lustily.

I also stood up, but still they were preparing to fire, when Trainer told our party to let off a volley:

they did so. Both Stewart and his crew, as they recognised us, stopped their proceedings, and stood on the deck like statues, petrified with amazement; we advanced boldly, and in perfect order. Trainer got the savages to give one more yell, and a few strokes of their stout paddles swept us alongside our vessel. We passed Stewart's brig first, he leaning over the bulwarks gazing at us in astonishment.

Trainer shouted out, "Come on board, Stewart, and hear the news."

"Ay, ay," answered our friend.

Connel made all the savages sweep their canoes to the bank of the river, land and encamp, whilst he came on board the Hound with us. And as Trainer jumped off the bulwark on his own deck, he exclaimed, "Thank God!" Stewart was quickly on board, shaking us both heartily by the hands, exclaiming, every now and then, "Nice company, this, you have been in;" as he eyed the groups of savages on shore, who had already commenced lighting a few fires for cooking.

Stewart was eagerly anxious to find out where we were; what we had been doing, &c.; all of which inquiries were postponed for a little. Connel, in the costume we had first seen him, was yet standing at the gangway, when Trainer called him aft to where

we were. "Captain Stewart, allow me the superior pleasure of introducing to you Terence Connel, formerly an Irishman, now king, or a head chief of an extensive and bold tribe of the Horraforas."

Stewart raised his chip hat, and curved his long awkward body with true comicality, and said, "He was glad of the acquaintance of such an illustrious personage." Trainer continued with seriousness: "Stewart, he is a wise, friendly, and brave man; only for his sagacity, together with the bravery of his people, none of us would ever have been on board the Hound again."

"Give me your hand, Connel: you're heartily welcome on board the Hound, and to any thing in her that you fancy, and that I can spare."

This almost naked man before us, now betrayed a deep feeling of emotion, as he hoarsely whispered: "Thank ye, captain, thank ye." "And give me your hand my brave fellow," said Stewart, warmly, "for bringing my friends safe back again; the best glass of grog in my brig, ay, or anything else you like, is yours, but we're not going to part just yet. Trainer, whose guest is he going to be during our stay?" "Mine," emphatically, said Trainer.

We retired without further talk to the cabin; where both Trainer and I changed our clothing, and

the king of the Horraforas was soon metamorphosed, by putting on a fine new shirt, trousers, and jacket, of Trainer's, which fitted him exactly. He dressed himself in the centre of the cabin in our presence; the exhibition was a truly ludicrous one, and made particularly so, by various exclamations of his whilst so engaged.

"Arrah! Captain, jewel, sure these articles are too nice intirely for this wild counthry." As he handled the trousers, and stood on one leg to put the other into them: "Faix, it's so mighty long since I had a pair of the things on me, I'm forgettin how to git into thim." And having at length succeeded with one leg, he fell back in a chair nearly choked with laughter; whilst Stewart, who had seen him for the first time thus comically inclined, was nearly in fits, and had to hold both his sides, and extend his long legs to give free vent to his mirth: this only excited Connel more, and a chorus of loud laughter continued between them for a few minutes.

At last, Connel managed to adjust every thing on him; really, he looked an altered man, and though awkward in clothing (he had not had any on for years before), certainly felt proud of them. "I wondther what thim Horraforas 'ill think of their chief whin they see me agin?" Though Connel was first gloomy

when he came on board, he was now fast losing that and becoming quite mirthful; and, both by his actions in his new fit out, as well as his observations, afforded Stewart, at least, a prime treat.

During the afternoon's conversation, Stewart informed us that, feeling very uneasy at none of our party returning, he dispatched a party of men, six from his own brig, and six from the Hound, all fully armed and under charge of Trainer's second mate, to go and search for us. About a mile up the river, after landing, they all entered the woods, intending a near cut across the country, in the direction we were last observed from the mast heads of the vessel.

They had scarcely entered the cover of the woods, when yells issued from the throats of hundreds of savages, (at this part of the conversation, Connel seemed so excited and interested in every word spoken, that he leaned forward in his chair with mouth and eyes conspicuously open); the barbarians jumped up from their ambush, and made a rush on the men with spears and clubs, but a ripping volley from the muskets, with a few thrusts from the fixed bayonets, drove them back into the wood, and allowed the party to retreat unhurt, into the open plain in front of it, out of the reach of any of their missiles.

The officer in charge of the men, seeing such a number of savages in their way, thought it prudent to return, and, as they say in parliament, "report progress." Stewart then considered it would be a risk to send the men off again; at least, he determined on waiting two or three days more, and he was glad now to see us safe again. As Stewart finished his account of the party he sent after us, the officer that had charge of it just entered the cabin; on Connel's being informed of this, he accosted the mate with, "Come here, jewel, and gist sit down beside me till I ask ye two or three questions."

The officer did as he was desired by our new guest. "Did ye git a good steady look at thim savages in the wood, I mane a close one," said Connel. The mate answered in the affirmative.

"Had they any paint on their bodies?"

"They had," answered the mate. "They were streaked all over with white paint." Connel on hearing this thumped his hand on the table.

"Wasn't I jist right, Captain Trainer, when I wouldn't let ye move for fear of thim murdtherin 'White Paint' scouts. I knew the thieves were down hereabouts outlaying. It's a marcy, Captain Stewart, ye didn't push on the min ye sent out; if they had encamped at night, the poisoned arrows

would be stickin in thim. Well, gintlemin, its one great comfort now to Terry Connel and his tribe, the counthry hereabouts, all the lands of the 'White Paints,' and I don't know how far, is all our own. The woods clear, and yees all may sport away through thim in safety now, as much as yees plase. The 'White Paints' are done for: many thanks, Captain Trainer, to ye and yeer brave fellows, for the help yees gave us in the scrimmage, for there were odds agin us."

Connel's observations excited Stewart's curiosity so much that a full account of the battle had to be given to him, with all the other particulars of our cruise on shore. As Trainer proceeded with the details, he was so astonished that he seemed to be in one continued paroxysm of wonder, straining his head occasionally forward, and slapping either knee with his large outspread hand. And when he received all the particulars that then occurred to our memory, he filled out some brandy and water. "Gentlemen, you have had a queer excursion of it; here's to your happy return. King of the Horraforas, here's to you and your brave tribe." "Thank'ee, captain."

"Connel," said Trainer, "will you take brandy, rum, or wine." "No, thank'ee, sir; sure it's long

since I tasted the likes, and it might bother me. I often had a notion of makin a drop here for myself, out of thim sugar canes that are growin wild along the banks of the river; but yees see if I did, the rest of the tribe might larn the thrade, and thin a purty set I'd have to dale wid. So I said to myself, I'll do no sich thing, the're wild and mad enough without that, so that's the rason; Captain, jewel, I takes none myself."

Before nightfall Trainer, finding that Connel persisted in his body-guard encamping, night and day, on shore, sent them a large bag of biscuit, and two or three old sails to make tents of; they had plenty of fresh pork with them, so they were not uncomfortable, for savages, during the night; particularly as we perceived the numerous blazing fires they had. Not the least interesting appearance they made was, when it was night and completely dark, two or three canoes shoved off into the river with lights, which they held over the water. This attracted the fish, and the natives appeared very successful in spearing them; fine mullet of a large size were so taken, and two immense ones were brought alongside our vessel, and handed up for the use of their chief.

The next morning it was determined on by both

captains, that they would thoroughly overhaul their rigging, and do some repairs to the hulls of the vessels before they started; indeed, Stewart had even his topmast already struck for the purpose, and the hull of his brig, that had been so much damaged by the shot of the Malay prows, was not yet satisfactorily repaired, so that our stay here, in this (now to us) friendly district, was certain to be for a few days longer. Connel was spoken to with respect to the trading with his people; both Trainer and Stewart placed every confidence in his integrity; told him to name the price, or rather article to be given in exchange for any thing his people offered, and it would be given.

After this he went on shore in his new costume. I accompanied him for the purpose of observing the effect his change in apparel would have on the warriors, and I must say, he "astonished the natives." They crowded round, first gazing in amazement at him, then closing upon him, and familiarly pawed him all over, to the no little amusement of the chief. After this was over, he dispatched runners to his own town, and that of the late "White Paints," to bring down trade and commence business in earnest.

We then went on board again, as I felt yet much fatigued from our late excitement, and travelling

hastily over the rough part of the country. As for Connel, "He was jist youst to sich a thing, and he was as fresh as a daisy, only for one of his ankles that was strained in the row; but no matter about that, it ud be soon well."

The work went on fast on board the vessels, and after four o'clock each day, the crews were allowed a run on shore, which pleased them much, as they had a variety in the friendly Horraforas belonging to Connel's tribe; and several times they enjoyed a "jolly good hog-hunt" in the woods and the adjacent cane-brakes. Connel enjoyed the best bed on board the Hound. I soon recovered from my fatigue; but as for my friend Trainer, his soft feet were covered with blisters from the unusual walking, and he was in a pair of soft slippers, like a man in the gout, for three or four days.

In due time the natives arrived with the trade, which consisted of tortoiseshell, pearl, and some gold-dust, bread-fruit, plantain, cocoa-nut, &c. Trainer and Stewart agreed together that the trade offered by the natives should be fairly divided between them; and Connel acting as agent, both for the captains and his people. He did so with the utmost fairness; indeed, I must say, that feeling himself so confided in by us, he felt an awkwardness

in asking almost any thing for his own tribe; and in some instances would allow us to give only mere baubles for really valuable lots of seed pearl.

Thus the trading went on during several days, but as I had nothing to do with it, I took advantage of the now peaceable state of the district and scoured the country for miles round, gratifying myself with strange scenery, peeping into caves, shooting wild-ducks and cats, fishing in the river, and occasionally, with twenty or thirty of Connel's warriors, engaged in a successful wild hog-hunt. During these various excursions, I saw in several places indications of iron and lead ore. In the vicinity of the volcanoes, there were great beds of sulphur.

After close observation and much inquiry as to the religion of the Horraforas, the only conclusion I could arrive at was, that they had none. They had a superstitious awe of lightning and thunder, and would not move on any war expedition, either day or night, as long as it lasted. The volcanoes that abound in the interior of this great island seemed also to attract their superstitious fears; and they formed some idea, that an angry spirit or departed great chief was inside it pitching out the fire. A clouded sun often caused gloom over them, so much so that they would scarcely move out of their nests in the trees until it shone out

cloudless. The moonlight seemed to delight them all, and they hailed any unusual brightness of it as a good omen; but as to any direct Spirit or image to pay distinct adoration to, they had none.

Both vessels having undergone a thorough repair in hull and rigging, and having a good supply of fresh pork, bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts, they were unmoored, and we dropped down the river to near its mouth, and let go our anchors again at a place where Connel told us we could get a supply of fresh water in any quantity we pleased. Abreast of where we now lay the shore was bold and rocky, and no appearance whatever of any stream. However, on going in the boats, we rounded a high promontory of rocks, and at the back of these, completely concealed from observation, there was a small shingly beach, over which a large sheet of fresh water rattled along into the sea.

The casks were consequently towed on shore from the vessels, rolled over this beach, and filled from a pool of the purest water inside. Being now ready for sea Connel left the Hound, being well satisfied with his trading with us, and particularly the possession of a double-barrelled fowling-piece with four ships' muskets and bayonets, and ammunition enough to last him a long time. We accompanied him to the water-run, where his warriors were en-

camped waiting for him. Trainer, having previously pressed him hard to leave the savages and come with us, made him a last earnest offer of a passage to any part he chose to land at. "Captain, jewel, yeer mighty kind intirely; and if I'd go with any man living, it 'ud be with ye. It's myself 'ill be sorrowful many's the long day after yees go: but no matter."

The last words were spoken in a low voice, hoarse with emotion, then he shook himself up and continued, "What's the use in a disarter and a runaway convict, iver draming of returning agin to the ould counthry. No, no, captain, jewel, I'll stop may be as long as I live with this tribe of Horraforas, and my bones most likely 'ill be burned with the rest, for that's the way we ind it here. Yees were all in a scrape with thim 'White Paints.' I tould yees I'd see all safe aboard agin. Didn't Terry Connel keep his word?"

"You did, my brave fellow," said Trainer. "Can I do any thing else for you?" "Nothin," said Connel. With that he took a hand of each of us, and pressed it warmly for awhile. This, as it were, demon of a man in fight, seemed overpowered with deep feeling. He stared at us for a few seconds. His eyes glistened with moisture, and, without uttering a word, suddenly let go our hands and rushed

madly away amongst his own savages, who were already on the move; who, as soon as he joined, gave a parting yell to us, and continued their march at a rapid rate up by the water-run.

We gazed after Connel and his wild body-guard, until they entered a patch of forest which concealed them from our sight. Thus disappeared from our view, a bold, warm-hearted man, though wild and reckless in character; by folly of his own, making him an outcast from, I may say, all Christian society. We were soon on board, and taking advantage of a fresh breeze, we got under weigh and stood out for the eastward.

CHAPTER XVII.

SAIL ROUND CAPE VALSCHE. — TORRES STRAITS. — SOUTHERN SHORE OF NEW GUINEA. — SOME DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTRY. — HOSTILE NATIVES. — THICK WEATHER. — NARROW ESCAPE. — HEAVY SQUALLS. — CAPE YORK. — THE VESSELS PART COMPANY. — LATEST ACCOUNT OF CAPTAIN STEWART. — REMARKS ON THE NATIVES LATELY VISITED. — NEW HEBRIDES. — ISLAND OF MALLICOLLO. — SANDWICH HARBOUR. — WHALER AND A TRADER AT ANCHOR. — THEIR BRUSH WITH THE NATIVES. — WE STEER ALONG THE ISLAND. — TRADE WITH THE NATIVES. — AN ACCOUNT OF THEM. — APPEARANCE OF THE ISLAND. — GOOD NEWS PER SHIP ISAIC COFFIN. — — ARRIVE AT TAHITI. — THE STRATFORD REFITTING. — LATEST INTELLIGENCE OF CAPTAIN TRAINER AND THE HOUND.

WHEN we gained a safe offing, the course was changed to south in order to sail close by the south-westernmost point of land of New Guinea, termed "Cape Valsche." Having rounded this, and being fairly in Torres Straits, we ran along the land in an easterly direction. At first, the vessels were kept running under easy sail close in shore, but afterwards had to haul off a little on account of the great mud-

flats and shoal-water, which extended out a long way. Three different times we encountered the mouths of rivers; and, as the water was deep enough in the range of the stream, we ran the Hound into them; whilst Stewart kept his brig, with a deeper draught of water, under canvas outside.

The country seemed level with extensive plains of dried-up grass, and immense trees growing on it in clumps here and there; we fairly entered two of the rivers, and as there was no appearance of inhabitants, we landed from the boats and amused ourselves for a few hours on shore. The general appearance of the land was similar to Australia; extensive tracts of sandy soil, parched up coarse grass, trees of a clean stem, and great height; water holes in abundance, covered with wild duck; the other birds were not plentiful, such as the lorie, bird of Paradise, &c.; but to make up for that, bats and lizards of enormous size were amusing themselves every where. On this dry sandy soil a vast number of snakes were writhing about.

The banks of the rivers were low, and the land far in from them bore every mark of being inundated periodically. The third river we attempted looked differently; the country appeared to slope up from the sea-shore gradually towards the interior, where

we could distinguish with the telescope, mountain heaped on mountain, until the most distant appeared of great elevation; the land, too, was nearly covered over with a magnificent forest.

On nearing the mouth of the river, great numbers of the Horraforas came down to the water's edge, and made every demonstration to oppose our landing; but indeed they might save themselves the trouble, for they were rather too ferocious-looking to claim an acquaintance with. This tribe was painted yellow on the body, and from the knees down to the ankles. As soon as we saw their display of hostility, we knew it was no use in endeavouring to trade with them, so we pulled the boat quickly out of their reach, lest an unfriendly salute of their six feet arrows might damage some of us. The beards of these men were allowed to grow long; in fact, on the most of them that we could distinctly see, it extended down on their chest.

The boat was hoisted up, and we steered towards Stewart's brig; a consultation was held between the two captains, and they came to a determination not to delay longer on this southern shore of New Guinea, as the tribes both of Papuans and Horraforas were too ferocious and hostile to trade with, there being no "Terry Connels" to control them. Besides,

the mud banks and shoal water, which in some places extend far out, made the navigation both intricate and dangerous, so both vessels were steered to the southward and eastward through Torres Straits.

When nearly abreast of "Cape York," the northernmost point of Australia, the currents were tried and found to be setting strongly in a southerly direction. Thick weather set in, and an occasional heavy squall from the north-east, aided by the unusually strong current, gave us a shove more southerly than we expected, for at daylight one morning, one of the crew who had the look out at the bows, sang out, "Land close to, on the lee bow."

We had just room to wear and nothing to spare; one look sufficed for Trainer's experience: "Hard up the helm, jump aft here men, and stand by to gibe the mainboom." "Ay, ay, sir," quickly answered the willing crew; and as the vessel worked in gallant style, she was soon on the other tack without making much lee way. Stewart's brig had already poked her ugly stem out of the haze, when he perceived us; we waved him off, and he at once answered our signal by heaving his vessel round on

the other tack, so both vessels were now heading to the north-west.

During the long intervals between the squalls, we had nothing but dead calms and thick weather. The current was so strong, that the surface of the water was crackling and bubbling all about us; the vessels were completely under its influence, and we were carried along southerly into the Gulf of Carpentaria, to the eastward of Cape York. The land we were so nearly striking on, was one of a group of islands lying close to the northward of Cape York, termed "Prince of Wales's Islands."

After being, as Trainer called it, "regularly humbugged," in the Gulf of Carpentaria for four days, the hazy weather cleared off, and a southerly breeze springing up, we crowded on sail to get out of the Gulf, and we succeeded, for the vessels soon rounded Cape York again, and were once more in the wide ocean, and enjoyed what a sailor likes well, "sea room." We now sailed on easterly, with light irregular winds and a smooth sea.

When in latitude 25° south, and 154° east longitude, we bid farewell and parted company with our friend Stewart, who was bound to New Zealand for some dressed flax to complete his cargo. As he passed our stern on his southerly course, his crew

gave us three cheers; which we of course returned "with a will." Not having Stewart's slow sailing brig to wait for now, we set all sail, steering east by south for the centre of the New Hebrides.

The last I heard of Captain Stewart, was, that having made ultimately a round sum of money, and being dissatisfied with his brig and tired of a sea life, he sold his vessel, and returned to Scotland to visit his relations and see who was dead or alive. But it seems his return back to his native land was not satisfactory to him; those he really liked were in the grave, and the rest of them wanted more from him than he felt inclined to give, so he made a hasty retreat, took a passage on board a vessel bound to Valparaiso, and settled himself down in that city with some old Pacific Ocean trading companions.

From what I have seen of the natives of the islands last visited, I should say that those of New Ireland and New Britain are the same race as the Papuan; they differ certainly much in their habitations, mode of life, the painting and decoration of their bodies, also in their ear and nose ornaments; yet their size, colour of skin, features, and woolly hair, are the same. There are various tribes on New Ireland, New Britain, and amongst the Papuans, who all differ from each other in both ornaments,

and the colours used in painting their bodiès, each tribe having its own characteristic colour; but I think I can safely state they are one and the same race.

The Horraforas' tribes, which I have already spoken of, are a distinct race altogether. They inhabit chiefly the interior of the country and southern shore of New Guinea. They bear a strong resemblance to the North American Indians, only that they are of a darker colour and allow their beards to grow; but both Papuan and Horrafora are equally hostile to traders and ferocious in their own way, and in their own battles, each tribe in New Guinea, of both races, being generally at war with the other.

It is a pity that there is no European christian settlement on such a large island. I should say the northern side, from its rocky shore and high land, would be the most healthy site for a colony. The southern shore, from its low ground and swamps, would be the reverse; besides, the ground is more sandy, and in no direction along it can you perceive the luxuriant vegetation that clothes the northern, and north-western shores and hills.

Both Papuans and Horraforas are fierce races to contend with; but the boldness and perseverance of English colonists would soon overcome the fiercest tribes in New Guinea; ay, and perhaps christianise

them. That New Guinea contains great mineral wealth is beyond all doubt. Its bays, harbours, and rivers, are extensive; and I cannot think that such a luxuriant country can long remain in the hands of the barbarians who now possess, or rather inhabit it.

After a short run we reached the large island of "Mallicollo," one of the New Hebrides' group, and hove-to off Sandwich harbour, which is at the south-east end of the island in 167° 50′ east longitude, and 16° 20′ south latitude. A boat was lowered, and, with a well-armed crew, pulled into the harbour to ascertain if we could procure any animal or vegetable refreshment for the crew of the Hound; but here we were disappointed, for a whale-ship and a small trader were close in shore at anchor, and we were informed by them, that a watering party from the ship had some misunderstanding with the natives, a row ensued, and after a smart skirmish, was only ended by a few rounds of grape-shot from the guns of the trading vessel; thus all communication was cut off from the shore, and none of the natives appearing afterwards, both vessels, after doing some mischief as usual, were preparing to get underweigh and leave the harbour, so we pulled off to the Hound again, and steered along the eastern side of the island.

About five leagues from Sandwich harbour, we hove-to off an inlet, and several canoes came off in the most friendly manner: I dare say ignorant of what had occurred further south. They all appeared very animated. From their dark skins and woolly heads they closely resembled the Papuans. Though there were upwards of two hundred of them about the vessels, I could not perceive any tatooing, or puncturing of the skin, on any of them. They were, I may fairly say, naked. They wore a kind of rope round their belly, made of cocoa-nut husk fibre, and pieces of cloth, stained different colours, folded round it. There was also round their waist a small cord similarly manufactured from this. Both before and behind was suspended a strip of fine matting about six inches wide: the lower edges of both strips were tied together with a cord between the legs. This was all their dress, which, I presume, you will say was scanty enough. They had a few bows and arrows with them, lying in the bottom of the canoes; but they did not handle them with any demonstration of hostility.

Trainer being pretty well practised in making himself understood by signs, soon conveyed to the natives an idea of what he wanted, and shortly after several canoes came off laden with domesticated

hogs, poultry in abundance, bread-fruit, sugar-cane, yams, cocoa-nuts, oranges, &c. In exchange for these the natives were delighted to receive squares of blue calico, or scarlet stuff, and blue or white china beads. All our trading passed off pleasantly; and, having obtained a very good supply of refreshments, we hauled off shore and stood to the eastward.

During the two days we were getting off our supplies the weather was particularly fine and the atmosphere clear, which afforded us a fine view of the land, both with naked eye and telescope. In every direction, both on high and low land, the vegetation appeared to be dense and of the most luxuriant kind. The land in the interior rose into lofty mountains, which were covered up to their summits with forest trees.

Fresh breezes and fine weather accompanied us as we steered on our easterly course. When within three or four days' sail of the Georgian Islands, we spoke several whale ships, and, amongst the rest, one called the "Isaic Coffin," belonging, I believe, to Nantucket. The captain of her told us he had been only five days out from Tahiti, and conveyed to me the gratifying intelligence that my old ship, the Stratford, was in Papeete harbour fitting out for the homeward bound passage. The Hound being a fast

sailor, we were off the upper entrance into Papeete harbour the third morning after, and, taking advantage of the first puff of the trade wind, we entered the passage, sailed down inside the reef, and were soon snug at anchor in the eastern side of this smooth harbour, within two hundred yards of Captain Abrill's house.

The Stratford had her top-gallant mast and yards all upon deck: the topmasts struck, and, in fact, every portion of her rigging, &c. was undergoing a thorough overhauling. I received a hearty greeting when I went on board. Every man welcomed me, from the captain to the cook, and, after I got my "traps" out of the Hound, a chair was placed on the quarter-deck for my accommodation, whilst I had to narrate several of my adventures to the officers and ship's company. So I was a kind of a lion for awhile, but soon found myself perfectly at home again.

Trainer lost no time in taking on board the arrow-root and cocoa-nut oil, which was ready for him in considerable quantities, and, after an eight days' stay, during which time we made all the amusement we could for him, he got under weigh, steered out of the lower entrance to the harbour, and soon disappeared in the distance. He was first bound to Valparaiso; and, if he could not dispose of his cargo to advantage

there, he intended to go to the Sandwich Islands with it. However, I understand he sold it nearly all at Valparaiso to great advantage, making well by his adventurous trading; and, to finish his exploits in the Pacific, he married a Spanish creole young lady of great wealth, and is now a resident don of high rank in the city of St. Jago, the capital of Chili.

CHAPTER XVIII.

SOME REMARKS ON MY LAST VISIT TO TAHITI. — WE SAIL OVER TO EIMEO. — PASSAGE HOME. — EASTER ISLAND. — A SUPPLY OF YAMS PROCURED. — THE ARTICLE OF TRADE. — ICE ISLANDS. — THEIR MAGNIFICENCE. — DANGEROUS NAVIGATION. — CAPE HORN. — THE TRADE WINDS ON THE AFRICAN COAST. — CHOPS OF THE CHANNEL. — A SAILOR'S TRICK. — DUNGENESS. — PILOT ON BOARD. — HOME AGAIN. — MY ENTRY INTO LONDON.

On my return, I found Tahiti much as I had left it. There was only one difference, and that was, the natives were evidently fast breaking through their missionary and temperance laws, and were getting very fond of rum, &c. They were now frequently to be seen in groups of half a dozen each, under the shade of a tree, passing the bottle round in true Bacchanalian style. After my return to my old ship, I had nearly a month's stay at Tahiti, which time was passed in the most agreeable manner amongst my old friends and a Christian community. Both the captain and I had sleeping apartments at our friend Bicknell's, whose house is situated close to the beach, directly

opposite the eastern entrance to the harbour of Papeete.

As I have, in a former work, described both Tahiti and Eimeo, I shall not in this make any further remarks, but simply state, that, the ship Stratford being refitted and ready for the homeward bound passage in the middle of November, 1835, we sailed over to Eimeo, took on board Mr. Armitage, an old missionary, who had served his cause faithfully for a period exceeding thirty years amongst the Georgian Islands group, and made the best of our way to the southward and eastward.

When close in with Easter Island, situated in 27° 5′ south latitude and 109° 45′ west longitude, we hove to and sent three boats in shore to procure some of the fine yams for which this island is justly celebrated. This island had a very bare appearance, in viewing it from the ship: there was scarcely a tree on it of any size, and here and there, where patches of shrubs grew, they were of stunted growth.

We could perceive, by the aid of our telescopes, in the low grounds, ranges of rude stake fences, against which the yam tops were trained, something after the manner of a vine. The boats' crews succeeded in obtaining cargoes of yams of a huge size. One of them was so large, that curiosity tempted us to weigh

it, which test proved to us that its weight was seventy-eight pounds, some odd ounces. They all resembled the beet-root in shape, but not in colour. They were brown, like a potato, and very firm, and, when a thick slice off one of them was boiled, it would serve several men, and afforded us a substantial addition to our mess for some time after.

This excellent vegetable was procured by giving in exchange a few buckets-full of whale scraps, or, in more intelligible language to the reader, the shrunk-up blubber of the whale after the oil had been boiled out of it. The natives gave a preference to this queer article of trade, instead of any cloth, beads, &c. we offered to them. The winds were strong here, and a heavy swell came rolling on the south-west side of the island and burst with fury against the rocks and cliffs, throwing up its spray, in great splendour, fully two hundred feet into the air.

Having taken inboard the yams, and hoist up the boats, we steered on to the southward and eastward. As we increased our southing, large quantities of ice were passed, forming islands of miles in circumference, against whose sides the surf beat and rose with as much fury as if they were land. The extreme elevation of some of these magnificent icebergs was fully four hundred feet; they must have had an enormous

base, as there was not the slightest motion perceptible in them, amidst the tremendous waves that rolled past.

They were all of a shade of bluish white, and when the sun shone on them, their grandeur was truly wonderful to gaze on. On ranging your eye along their surface and upper ridges, you might fancy you saw towns here and there, with houses of a peculiar shape, and spires, monuments, &c., in every direction. The various blocks of ice, and glistening spires, or spikes, that shot up, gave this fairy appearance to the scene, and the longer you gazed on it, the more your imagination would become, as it were, bewildered, until, perhaps, a loud report, like the simultaneous discharge of heavy artillery, told you that it cracked from its summit to its base; a large rent would gradually appear, and increase at the top, until each half of the iceberg would finally separate from the other, and, when at a short distance, each portion of the separated ice would give an awful roll over, and present to our view an iceberg of quite a different form and aspect from that on which we gazed a few minutes before.

Such a sight is peculiarly fascinating: you cannot take your gaze off it, until, during the process of thawing, it cracks with a thundering noise, separates,

tumbles over to right itself for floating, then perhaps you can perceive the reality, that it is ice you have been staring at, rub your eyes in amazement, and turn away from the delusion. As we sailed on these islands were numerous: in fact, one morning there were twenty-four of them counted in sight from the maintop of our ship, so that a constant look out was kept in the foretop to con the ship through the smaller pieces of floating ice, as we scudded under a close-reefed topsail and foresail before the strong south-west gales that pursued us with fury round Cape Horn.

There were also many ice islands on the eastern side of Cape Horn; but once having ascertained our true position, and finding ourselves fairly in the South Atlantic, our course was altered, and we steered in a northerly and easterly direction, which soon left the floating ice far behind, and enabled us to cast off some of the additional clothing we found so essential in a higher latitude.

In 24° 30′ south latitude, we were favoured with the south-east trade winds, and, after being becalmed only four hours on the equator, continued our northerly course, until we fairly ran out of the influence of the trade winds in 23° 30′ north latitude. During this long run we were on the starboard tack,

and not a sail was shifted or altered, so even was the force of the wind.

There was only one remarkable incident to attract our attention: our course lay fully between two or three hundred miles from the African coast as we sailed along, yet our sails were coloured lightly brown, and in the layers of the rigging and ropes was deposited a light brownish sand, which, Captain Lock informed me, was blown off from the sand hills that line part of the western coast of Africa; and the chief part of our ship's company told me such was always the case with vessels running down the trade winds along this coast.

Well, in due time, after variable winds, we got out of the deep blue sea, on green water, and down went our deep sea lead, with the hole in the end of it filled with tallow as usual: this instrument touched the bottom at three hundred and fifty fathoms, and brought up sand and shells, plainly informing us that we were in the "chops of the Channel."

It not unfrequently happens to passengers and persons who are temporarily on board a ship, that, after the captain and officers have taken a note of the sand, shells, &c., that are brought up by the lead, and sunk in the tallow, they are invited to look at it, and snuff up the peculiar smell of the land that this

00038330

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 13 February, 2016